# Reversibility of whole-plane SLE 

Dapeng Zhan

Received: 17 May 2013 / Revised: 13 February 2014 / Published online: 18 March 2014
© Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg 2014


#### Abstract

The main result of this paper is that, for $\kappa \in(0,4]$, whole-plane SLE $_{\kappa}$ satisfies reversibility, which means that the time-reversal of a whole-plane SLE $_{\kappa}$ trace is still a whole-plane $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace. In addition, we find that the time-reversal of a radial $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace for $\kappa \in(0,4]$ is a disc $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace with a marked boundary point. The main tool used in this paper is a stochastic coupling technique, which is used to couple two whole-plane SLE $_{\kappa}$ traces so that they overlap. Another tool used is the FeynmanKac formula, which is used to solve a PDE. The solution of this PDE is then used to construct the above coupling.


Mathematics Subject Classification 60G - 30C

## 1 Introduction

The stochastic Loewner evolution (SLE) introduced by Oded Schramm [1] describes some random fractal curves in plane domains that satisfy conformal invariance and Domain Markov Property. These two properties make SLEs the most suitable candidates for the scaling limits of many two-dimensional lattice models at criticality. These models are proved or conjectured to converge to SLE with different parameters (e.g., [2-7]). For basics of SLE, the reader may refer to [8] and [9].

There are several different versions of SLEs, among which chordal SLE and radial SLE are the most well-known. A chordal or radial SLE trace is a random fractal curve that grows in a simply connected plane domain from a boundary point. A chordal SLE

Partially supported by NSF grant DMS-0963733.
D. Zhan ( $\boxtimes$ )

Michigan State University, East Lansing, United States
e-mail: zhan@ math.msu.edu
trace ends at another boundary point, and a radial SLE trace ends an interior point. Their behaviors both depend on a positive parameter $\kappa$. When $\kappa \in(0,4]$, both traces are simple curves, and all points on the trace other than the initial and final points lie inside the domain. When $\kappa>4$, the traces have self-intersections.

A stochastic coupling technique was introduced in [10] to prove that, for $\kappa \in(0,4]$, chordal $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ satisfies reversibility, which means that if $\beta$ is a chordal $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace in a domain $D$ from $a$ to $b$, then after a time-change, the time-reversal of $\beta$ becomes a chordal $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace in $D$ from $b$ to $a$. The technique was later used $[11,12]$ to prove Duplantier's duality conjecture, which says that, for $\kappa>4$, the boundary of the hull generated by a chordal $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace looks locally like an $\mathrm{SLE}_{16 / \kappa}$ trace. The technique was also used to prove that the radial or chordal $\mathrm{SLE}_{2}$ can be obtained by erasing loops on a planar Brownian motion [13], and the chordal $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \rho)$ introduced in [2] also satisfies reversibility for $\kappa \in(0,4]$ and $\rho \geq \kappa / 2-2$ [14].

Since the initial point and final point of a radial SLE are topologically different, the time-reversal of a radial SLE trace can not be a radial SLE trace. However, we may consider whole-plane SLE instead, which describes a random fractal curve in the Riemann sphere $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}=\mathbb{C} \cup\{\infty\}$ that grows from one interior point to another interior point. Whole-plane SLE is related to radial SLE as follows: conditioned on the initial part of a whole-plane $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace, the rest part of such trace has the distribution of a radial $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace that grows in the complementary domain of the initial part of this trace. The main result of this paper is the following theorem.

Theorem 1.1 Whole-plane $S L E_{\kappa}$ satisfies reversibility for $\kappa \in(0,4]$.
The theorem in the case $\kappa=2$ has been proved in [15]. The proof used the reversibility of loop-erased random walk (LERW for short, see [16]) and the convergence of LERW to whole-plane $\mathrm{SLE}_{2}$. In this paper we will obtain a slightly more general result: the reversibility of whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, s)$ process, which is defined by adding a constant drift to the driving function for the whole-plane SLE $_{\kappa}$ process. This is the statement of Theorem 7.1.

To get some idea of the proof, let's first review the proof of the reversibility of chordal $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ in [10]. We constructed a pair of chordal SLE $_{\kappa}$ traces $\gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$ in a simply connected domain $D$, where $\gamma_{1}$ grows from a boundary point $a_{1}$ to another boundary point $a_{2}, \gamma_{2}$ grows from $a_{2}$ to $a_{1}$, and these two traces commute in the following sense. Fix $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$, if $T_{k}$ is a stopping time for $\gamma_{k}$, then conditioned on $\gamma_{k}(t), t \leq T_{k}$, the part of $\gamma_{j}$ before hitting $\gamma_{k}(t)\left(\left(0, T_{k}\right]\right)$ has the distribution of a chordal $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace that grows from $a_{j}$ to $\gamma_{k}\left(T_{k}\right)$ in $D_{k}\left(T_{k}\right)$, which is a component of $D \backslash \gamma_{k}(t)\left(\left(0, T_{k}\right]\right)$. In the case $\kappa \leq 4$, a.s. $\gamma_{j}$ hits $\gamma_{k}(t)\left(\left(0, T_{k}\right]\right)$ exactly at $\gamma_{k}\left(T_{k}\right)$, so $\gamma_{j}$ visits $\gamma_{k}\left(T_{k}\right)$ before any $\gamma_{k}(t), t<T_{k}$. Since this holds for any stopping time $T_{k}$ for $\gamma_{k}$, the two traces a.s. overlap, which implies the reversibility.

To prove the reversibility of whole-plane $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$, we want to construct two wholeplane $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ traces in $D=\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$, one is $\gamma_{1}$ from $a_{1}$ to $a_{2}$, the other is $\gamma_{2}$ from $a_{2}$ to $a_{1}$, so that $\gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$ commute. Here we can not expect that they commute in exactly the same sense as in the above paragraph. Note that conditioned on $\gamma_{k}(t), t \leq T_{k}$, the part of $\gamma_{j}$ before hitting $\gamma_{k}(t), t \leq T_{k}$, can not have the distribution of a whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace in $D_{k}\left(T_{k}\right)$ from $a_{1}$ to $\gamma_{k}\left(T_{k}\right)$ because now the complementary domain $D_{k}\left(T_{k}\right)$ is topologically different from $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$, while whole-plane SLEs are only defined in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$. Since
the conditional curve grows from an interior point to a boundary point, it is neither a radial SLE trace nor a chordal SLE trace.

Thus, we need to define SLE traces in simply connected domains that grow from an interior point to a boundary point. We use the idea of defining whole-plane SLE using radial SLE. The situation here is a little different: after a positive initial part, the rest part of the curve grows in a doubly connected domain. Another difference is that there is a marked point on the boundary of the initial domain. In this paper, we use the annulus Loewner equation introduced in [17] together with an annulus drift function $\Lambda=\Lambda(t, x)$ to define the so-called annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ process in a doubly connected domain $D$, which starts from a point $a \in \partial D$, and whose growth is affected by a marked point $b \in \partial D$. In the case when $a$ and $b$ lie on different boundary components, by shrinking the boundary component containing $a$ to a singlet, we get the so called disc $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$, which describes a random curve that grows in a simply connected domain and starts from an interior point.

We find that if $\Lambda=\kappa \frac{\Gamma^{\prime}}{\Gamma}$, where $\Gamma$ is a positive differentiable function defined on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$ that solves a linear PDE and satisfies some periodic condition [see (4.1) and (4.2)], then using the coupling technique we could construct a coupling of two whole-plane SLE $_{\kappa}$ traces: $\gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$, which commute in the sense that, conditioned on one curve up to a finite stopping time $T$, the other curve is a disc $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ trace in the remaining domain, and its marked point is the tip point of the first curve at $T$.

The main new idea in the current paper is an application of a Feynman-Kac representation, which is used to get a formal solution of the PDE for $\Gamma$ in the case $\kappa \in(0,4]$. Using Fubini's Theorem, Itô's formula, and some estimations, we prove that the formal solution $\Gamma_{\kappa}$ is smooth and solves the PDE. We then find that $\Lambda_{\kappa}:=\kappa \frac{\Gamma_{\kappa}^{\prime}}{\Gamma_{\kappa}}$ satisfies the property that the marked point for an annulus or disc $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\kappa}\right)$ process is a subsequential limit point of the trace. This property implies that, if two whole-plane $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ traces commute as in the previous paragraph, then they must overlap. So the main theorem is proved. Moreover, from the relation between whole-plane $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ and radial $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$, we conclude that, for $\kappa \in(0,4]$, the time-reversal of a radial $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace is a disc $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\kappa}\right)$ trace.

The marked point and the initial point of an annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ process could also lie on the same boundary component. In this case, if $\Lambda=\kappa \frac{\Gamma^{\prime}}{\Gamma}$, and $\Gamma$ satisfies a similar linear PDE [see (4.48)], then for a doubly connected domain $D$ with two boundary points $a_{1}$ and $a_{2}$ on the same boundary component, we can construct a pair of annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ traces $\gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$ in $D$, which commute with each other. If an SLE process in a doubly connected domain is the scaling limit of some random path in a lattice, which satisfies reversibility at the discrete level, then such SLE should satisfy reversibility. We hope that the work in this paper will shed some light on the study of these processes.

The study on the commutation relations of SLE in doubly connected domains continues the work in [18] by Dubédat, who used some tools from Lie Algebra to obtain commutation conditions of SLE in simply connected domains. The annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\kappa}\right)$ process used to prove the reversibility of whole-plane SLE $_{\kappa}$ was later studied in [19]. When $\kappa=8 / 3$, the process satisfies the restriction property, which is
similar to the restriction property for chordal $\operatorname{SLE}_{8 / 3}$ (see [2]). For $\kappa \in(0,4] \backslash\{8 / 3\}$, it satisfies some "weak" restriction property.

Lawler [20] used a different method to define annulus $\operatorname{SLE}_{\kappa}$ processes for $\kappa \in(0,4]$, which agree with our annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\kappa}\right)$ processes. His construction uses the Brownian loop measures. The "strong" $(\kappa=8 / 3)$ and "weak" $(\kappa \neq 8 / 3)$ restriction properties of Lawler's annulus SLE processes are immediate from the definition; and the reversibility of these processes follows from the chordal reversibility. However, the reversibility of whole-plane SLE is not proved in [20]. To get the whole-plane reversibility, some additional work is required based on Lawler's work. In this paper, the reversibility of annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\kappa}\right)$ and the reversibility of whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}_{\kappa}$ are proved separately, and the coupling technique is applied in both proofs, which are similar though.

Miller and Sheffield [21] recently proved the reversibility of whole-plane SLE for all $\kappa \in[0,8]$. Their proof uses the imaginary geometry of Gaussian free field developed in their earlier papers (c.f. [22]).

This paper is organized as follows. In Sect. 2, we introduce some symbols and notations. In Sect. 3, we review several versions of Loewner equations. In Sect. 3.4, we define annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ and disc $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ processes, whose growth is affected by one marked boundary point. In Sect. 4 we prove that when $\Gamma$ solves (4.1) or (4.48), there is a commutation coupling of two annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ processes, where $\Lambda=\kappa \frac{\Gamma^{\prime}}{\Gamma}$. In Sect. 5, we construct a coupling of two whole-plane SLE processes, which is similar to the coupling in the previous section. In Sect. 6, we solve PDE (4.1) using a Feynman-Kac expression, and the solution is then used in Sect. 7 to prove the reversibility of whole-plane $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ process. In fact, we obtain a slightly more general result: the reversibility of skew whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}_{\kappa}$ processes for $\kappa \in(0,4]$. In the last section, we find some solutions to the PDE for $\Gamma$ and $\Lambda$ when $\kappa \in\{0,2,3,4,16 / 3\}$, which can be expressed in terms of well-known special functions.

## 2 Preliminary

### 2.1 Symbols

Throughout this paper, we will use the following symbols. Let $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}=\mathbb{C} \cup\{\infty\}, \mathbb{D}=$ $\{z \in \mathbb{C}:|z|<1\}, \mathbb{T}=\{z \in \mathbb{C}:|z|=1\}$, and $\mathbb{H}=\{z \in \mathbb{C}: \operatorname{Im} z>0\}$. For $p>0$, let $\mathbb{A}_{p}=\left\{z \in \mathbb{C}: 1>|z|>e^{-p}\right\}$ and $\mathbb{S}_{p}=\{z \in \mathbb{C}: 0<\operatorname{Im} z<p\}$. For $p \in \mathbb{R}$, let $\mathbb{T}_{p}=\left\{z \in \mathbb{C}:|z|=e^{-p}\right\}$ and $\mathbb{R}_{p}=\{z \in \mathbb{C}: \operatorname{Im} z=p\}$. Then $\partial \mathbb{D}=\mathbb{T}$, $\partial \mathbb{H}=\mathbb{R}, \partial \mathbb{A}_{p}=\mathbb{T} \cup \mathbb{T}_{p}$, and $\partial \mathbb{S}_{p}=\mathbb{R} \cup \mathbb{R}_{p}$. Let $e^{i}$ denote the map $z \mapsto e^{i z}$. Then $e^{i}$ is a covering map from $\mathbb{H}$ onto $\mathbb{D}$, and from $\mathbb{S}_{p}$ onto $\mathbb{A}_{p}$; and it maps $\mathbb{R}$ onto $\mathbb{T}$ and maps $\mathbb{R}_{p}$ onto $\mathbb{T}_{p}$. For a doubly connected domain $D$, we use $\bmod (D)$ to denote its modulus. For example, $\bmod \left(\mathbb{A}_{p}\right)=p$.

A conformal map in this paper is a univalent analytic function. A conjugate conformal map is defined to be the complex conjugate of a conformal map. Let $I_{0}(z)=1 / \bar{z}$ be the reflection w.r.t. $\mathbb{T}$. Then $I_{0}$ is a conjugate conformal map from $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ onto itself, fixes $\mathbb{T}$, and interchanges 0 and $\infty$. Let $\widetilde{I}_{0}(z)=\bar{z}$ be the reflection w.r.t. $\mathbb{R}$. Then $\widetilde{I}_{0}$ is a conjugate conformal map from $\mathbb{C}$ onto itself and satisfies $e^{i} \circ \widetilde{I}_{0}=I_{0} \circ e^{i}$. For
$p>0$, let $I_{p}(z):=e^{-p} / \bar{z}$ and $\tilde{I}_{p}(z)=i p+\bar{z}$. Then $I_{p}$ and $\widetilde{I}_{p}$ are conjugate conformal automorphisms of $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ and $\mathbb{S}_{p}$, respectively. Moreover, $I_{p}$ interchanges $\mathbb{T}_{p}$ and $\mathbb{T}, \widetilde{I}_{p}$ interchanges $\mathbb{R}_{p}$ and $\mathbb{R}$, and $I_{p} \circ e^{i}=e^{i} \circ \widetilde{I}_{p}$.

We will frequently use functions $\cot (z / 2), \tan (z / 2), \operatorname{coth}(z / 2), \tanh (z / 2), \sin (z / 2)$, $\cos (z / 2), \sinh (z / 2)$, and $\cosh (z / 2)$. For simplicity, we write 2 as a subscript. For example, $\cot _{2}(z)$ means $\cot (z / 2)$, and we have $\cot _{2}^{\prime}(z)=-\frac{1}{2} \sin _{2}^{-2}(z)$.

An increasing function in this paper will always be strictly increasing. For a real interval $J$, we use $C(J)$ to denote the space of real continuous functions on $J$. The maximal solution to an ODE or SDE with initial value is the solution with the biggest definition domain.

Many functions in this paper depend on two variables. In some of these functions, the first variable represents time or modulus, and the second variable does not. In this case, we use $\partial_{t}$ and $\partial_{t}^{n}$ to denote the partial derivatives w.r.t. the first variable, and use ', ", and the superscripts ( $h$ ) to denote the partial derivatives w.r.t. the second variable. For these functions, we say that it has period $r$ (resp. is even or odd) if it has period $r$ (resp. is even or odd) in the second variable when the first variable is fixed. Some functions in Sects. 4 and 5 depend on two variables: $t_{1}$ and $t_{2}$, which both represent time. In this case we use $\partial_{j}$ to denote the partial derivative w.r.t. the $j$-th variable, $j=1,2$.

In this paper, a domain is a connected open subset of $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$, and a continuum is a connected compact subset of $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ that contains more than one point. A continuum $K$ is called a hull in $\mathbb{C}$ if $K \subset \mathbb{C}$ and $\widehat{\mathbb{C}} \backslash K$ is connected. In this case, there is a unique conformal map $f_{K}$ from $\widehat{\mathbb{C}} \backslash \overline{\mathbb{D}}$ onto $\widehat{\mathbb{C}} \backslash K$ and satisfies $\lim _{z \rightarrow \infty} f_{K}(z) / z=a_{K}$ for some positive number $a_{K}$. Then $a_{K}$ is called the capacity of $K$, and is denoted by cap $(K)$.

A doubly connected domain in this paper is a domain whose complement is a disjoint union of two continuums. Let $D$ be a doubly connected domain. If $K$ is a relatively closed subset of $D$, has positive distance from one boundary component of $D$, and if $D \backslash K$ is also doubly connected, then we call $K$ a hull in $D$, and call the number $\bmod (D)-\bmod (D \backslash K)$ the capacity of $K$ in $D$, and let it be denoted by $\operatorname{cap}_{D}(K)$.

### 2.2 Brownian motions

Throughout this paper, a Brownian motion means a standard one-dimensional Brownian motion, and $B(t), 0 \leq t<\infty$, will always be used to denote a Brownian motion. This means that $B(t)$ is continuous, $B(0)=0$, and $B(t)$ has independent increment with $B(t)-B(s) \sim N(0, t-s)$ for $t \geq s \geq 0$. For $\kappa \geq 0$, the rescaled Brownian motion $\sqrt{\kappa} B(t)$ will be used to define annulus $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$. The symbols $B_{*}(t), \widehat{B}_{*}(t)$, or $\widetilde{B}_{*}(t)$ will also be used to denote a Brownian motion, where the $*$ stands for subscript. Let $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)_{t \geq 0}$ be a filtration. By saying that $B(t)$ is an $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$-Brownian motion, we mean that $(B(t))$ is $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$-adapted, and for any fixed $t_{0} \geq 0, B\left(t_{0}+t\right)-B\left(t_{0}\right), t \geq 0$, is a Brownian motion independent of $\mathcal{F}_{t_{0}}$.

Definition 2.1 Let $\kappa>0$ and $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$ be a right-continuous filtration. A process $B^{(\kappa)}(t), t \in \mathbb{R}$, is called a pre- $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$-( $\left.\mathbb{T} ; \kappa\right)$-Brownian motion if $\left(e^{i}\left(B^{(\kappa)}(t)\right)\right)$ is $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$ adapted, and for any $t_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
B_{t_{0}}(t):=\frac{1}{\sqrt{\kappa}}\left(B^{(\kappa)}\left(t_{0}+t\right)-B^{(\kappa)}\left(t_{0}\right)\right), \quad 0 \leq t<\infty \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

is an $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{0}+t}\right)$-Brownian motion. If $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$ is generated by $\left(e^{i}\left(B^{(\kappa)}(t)\right)\right)$, then we simply call $\left(B^{(\kappa)}(t)\right)$ a pre-( $\left.\mathbb{T} ; \kappa\right)$-Brownian motion.

Remark The name of the pre-( $\mathbb{T} ; \kappa)$-Brownian motion comes from the fact that $B_{\mathbb{T}}(t):=e^{i}\left(B^{(\kappa)}(t)\right), t \in \mathbb{R}$, is a Brownian motion on $\mathbb{T}$ with speed $\kappa$ : for every $t_{0} \in \mathbb{R}, B_{\mathbb{T}}\left(t_{0}\right)$ is uniformly distributed on $\mathbb{T}$; and $B_{\mathbb{T}}\left(t_{0}+t\right) / B_{\mathbb{T}}\left(t_{0}\right), t \geq 0$, has the distribution of $e^{i}(\sqrt{\kappa} B(t)), t \geq 0$, and is independent of $B_{\mathbb{T}}(t), t \leq t_{0}$. One may construct $B^{(\kappa)}(t)$ as follows. Let $B_{+}(t)$ and $B_{-}(t), t \geq 0$, be two independent Brownian motions. Let $\mathbf{x}$ be a random variable uniformly distributed on $[0,2 \pi)$, which is independent of $\left(B_{ \pm}(t)\right)$. Let $B^{(\kappa)}(t)=\mathbf{x}+\sqrt{\kappa} B_{\operatorname{sign}(t)}(|t|)$ for $t \in \mathbb{R}$. Then $B^{(\kappa)}(t)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}$, is a pre-( $\mathbb{T} ; \kappa)$-Brownian motion.

Definition 2.2 Let $B^{(\kappa)}(t), t \in \mathbb{R}$, be a pre- $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$-( $\left.\mathbb{T} ; \kappa\right)$-Brownian motion, where $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$ is right-continuous, and every $\mathcal{F}_{t}$ contains all eligible events w.r.t. the process $\left(e^{i}\left(B^{(\kappa)}(t)\right)\right)$. Suppose $T$ is an $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$-stopping time, and $T>t_{0}$ for a deterministic number $t_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. We say that $X(t)$ satisfies the $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$-adapted SDE

$$
d X(t)=a(t) d B^{(\kappa)}(t)+b(t) d t, \quad-\infty<t<T
$$

if $e^{i}(X(t)), a(t)$, and $b(t)$ are continuous and $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}\right)$-adapted, and if for any deterministic number $t_{0}$ with $t_{0}<T, X_{t_{0}}(t):=X\left(t_{0}+t\right)-X\left(t_{0}\right)$ satisfies the following $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{0}+t}\right)_{t \geq 0^{-}}$ adapted SDE with the traditional meaning (c.f. Chapter IV, Section 3 of [23]):

$$
d X_{t_{0}}(t)=a_{t_{0}}(t) \sqrt{\kappa} d B_{t_{0}}(t)+b_{t_{0}}(t) d t, \quad 0 \leq t<T-t_{0},
$$

where $B_{t_{0}}(t)$ is given by $(2.1), a_{t_{0}}(t):=a\left(t_{0}+t\right)$, and $b_{t_{0}}(t):=b\left(t_{0}+t\right)$. Note that $B_{t_{0}}(t)$ is an $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{0}+t}\right)_{t \geq 0}$-Brownian motion, $X_{t_{0}}(t), a_{t_{0}}(t)$ and $b_{t_{0}}(t)$ are all $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{0}+t}\right)_{t \geq 0}$-adapted.

### 2.3 Special functions

We now introduce some functions that will be used to define annulus Loewner equations. For $t>0$, define

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{S}(t, z) & =\lim _{M \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{k=-M}^{M} \frac{e^{2 k t}+z}{e^{2 k t}-z}=\mathrm{P} . \mathrm{V} \cdot \sum_{2 \mid n} \frac{e^{n t}+z}{e^{n t}-z} \\
\mathbf{H}(t, z) & =-i \mathbf{S}\left(t, e^{i}(z)\right)=-i \mathrm{P} . \mathrm{V} \cdot \sum_{2 \mid n} \frac{e^{n t}+e^{i z}}{e^{n t}-e^{i z}}=\mathrm{P} . \mathrm{V} \cdot \sum_{2 \mid n} \cot _{2}(z-i n t) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then $\mathbf{H}(t, \cdot)$ is a meromorphic function in $\mathbb{C}$, whose poles are $\{2 m \pi+i 2 k t: m, k \in$ $\mathbb{Z}\}$, which are all simple poles with residue 2 . Moreover, $\mathbf{H}(t, \cdot)$ is an odd function and takes real values on $\mathbb{R} \backslash\{$ poles $\} ; \operatorname{Im} \mathbf{H}(t, \cdot) \equiv-1$ on $\mathbb{R}_{t} ; \mathbf{H}(t, z+2 \pi)=\mathbf{H}(t, z)$ and $\mathbf{H}(t, z+i 2 t)=\mathbf{H}(t, z)-2 i$ for any $z \in \mathbb{C} \backslash\{$ poles $\}$.

The power series expansion of $\mathbf{H}(t, \cdot)$ near 0 is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}(t, z)=\frac{2}{z}+\mathbf{r}(t) z+O\left(z^{3}\right) \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{r}(t)=\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \sinh ^{-2}(k t)-\frac{1}{6}$. As $t \rightarrow \infty, \mathbf{S}(t, z) \rightarrow \frac{1+z}{1-z}, \mathbf{H}(t, z) \rightarrow \cot _{2}(z)$, and $\mathbf{r}(t) \rightarrow-\frac{1}{6}$. So we define $\mathbf{S}(\infty, z)=\frac{1+z}{1-z}, \mathbf{H}(\infty, z)=\cot _{2}(z)$, and $\mathbf{r}(\infty)=-\frac{1}{6}$. Then $\mathbf{r}$ is continuous on $(0, \infty]$, and (2.2) still holds when $t=\infty$. In fact, we have $\mathbf{r}(t)-\mathbf{r}(\infty)=O\left(e^{-t}\right)$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$, so we may define $\mathbf{R}$ on $(0, \infty$ ] by $\mathbf{R}(t)=$ $-\int_{t}^{\infty}(\mathbf{r}(s)-\mathbf{r}(\infty)) d s$. Then $\mathbf{R}$ is continuous on $(0, \infty], \mathbf{R}(t)=O\left(e^{-t}\right)$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$, and for $0<t<\infty$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{R}^{\prime}(t)=\mathbf{r}(t)-\mathbf{r}(\infty) . \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\mathbf{S}_{I}(t, z)=\mathbf{S}\left(t, e^{-t} z\right)-1$ and $\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z)=-i \mathbf{S}_{I}\left(t, e^{i z}\right)=\mathbf{H}(t, z+i t)+i$. It is easy to check:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{S}_{I}(t, z)=\mathrm{P} . \mathrm{V} \cdot \sum_{2 \nmid n} \frac{e^{n t}+z}{e^{n t}-z}, \quad \mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z)=\mathrm{P} . \mathrm{V} . \sum_{2 \nmid n} \cot _{2}(z-i n t) . \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

So $\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ is a meromorphic function in $\mathbb{C}$ with poles $\{2 m \pi+i(2 k+1) t: m, k \in \mathbb{Z}\}$, which are all simple poles with residue $2 ; \mathbf{H}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ is an odd function and takes real values on $\mathbb{R}$; and $\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z+2 \pi)=\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z), \mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z+i 2 t)=\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z)-2 i$ for any $z \in \mathbb{C} \backslash\{$ poles $\}$.

It is possible to express $\mathbf{H}$ and $\mathbf{H}_{I}$ using classical functions. Let $\theta(\nu, \tau)$ and $\theta_{k}(\nu, \tau)$, $k=1,2,3$, be the Jacobi theta functions defined in Chapter V, Section 3 of [24]. Define $\Theta(t, z)=\theta\left(\frac{z}{2 \pi}, \frac{i t}{\pi}\right)$ and $\Theta_{I}(t, z)=\theta_{2}\left(\frac{z}{2 \pi}, \frac{i t}{\pi}\right)$. Then $\Theta_{I}$ has period $2 \pi, \Theta$ has antiperiod $2 \pi$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}=2 \frac{\Theta^{\prime}}{\Theta}, \quad \mathbf{H}_{I}=2 \frac{\Theta_{I}^{\prime}}{\Theta_{I}} \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

These follow from the product representations of $\Theta$ and $\Theta_{I}$. For example,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Theta_{I}(t, z)=\prod_{m=1}^{\infty}\left(1-e^{-2 m t}\right)\left(1-e^{-(2 m-1) t} e^{i z}\right)\left(1-e^{-(2 m-1) t} e^{-i z}\right) \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Both $\Theta$ and $\Theta_{I}$ solve the heat equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \Theta=\Theta^{\prime \prime}, \quad \partial_{t} \Theta_{I}=\Theta_{I}^{\prime \prime} \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

So $\mathbf{H}$ and $\mathbf{H}_{I}$ solve the PDE:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \mathbf{H}=\mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime}+\mathbf{H}^{\prime} \mathbf{H}, \quad \partial_{t} \mathbf{H}_{I}=\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime}+\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime} \mathbf{H}_{I} . \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

We rescale the functions $\mathbf{H}$ and $\mathbf{H}_{I}$ as follows. For $t>0$ and $z \in \mathbb{C}$, let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\mathbf{H}}(t, z)=\frac{\pi}{t} \mathbf{H}\left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{t}, \frac{\pi}{t} z\right)+\frac{z}{t}, \quad \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, z)=\frac{\pi}{t} \mathbf{H}_{I}\left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{t}, \frac{\pi}{t} z\right)+\frac{z}{t} . \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}$ and $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}$ have period $2 \pi$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\mathbf{H}}(t, z+2 k t)=\widehat{\mathbf{H}}(t, z)+2 k, \quad \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, z+2 k t)=\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, z)+2 k, \quad k \in \mathbb{Z} \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the identities for $\theta$ in [24] or formula (3) in [25], we see $\mathbf{H}(t, z)=$ $i \frac{\pi}{t} \mathbf{H}\left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{t}, i \frac{\pi}{t} z\right)-\frac{z}{t}$. So

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\mathbf{H}}(t, z)=-i \mathbf{H}(t,-i z)=\mathrm{P} . \mathrm{V} . \sum_{2 \mid n} \operatorname{coth}_{2}(z-n t) . \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z)=\mathbf{H}(t, z+i t)+i$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, z)=\widehat{\mathbf{H}}(t, z+\pi i)=\mathrm{P} \cdot \mathrm{~V} \cdot \sum_{2 \mid n} \tanh _{2}(z-n t) . \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (2.8) and (2.9) we may check that

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\partial_{t} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}=\widehat{\mathbf{H}}^{\prime \prime}+\widehat{\mathbf{H}}^{\prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}, \quad-\partial_{t} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}=\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime \prime}+\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime} \mathbf{H}_{I} . \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (2.11) and (2.12) we see that $\widehat{\mathbf{H}} t, \cdot) \rightarrow \operatorname{coth}_{2}$ and $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, \cdot) \rightarrow \tanh _{2}$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$.
From (2.4) we see that as $t \rightarrow \infty, \mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z) \rightarrow 0$, so its derivatives about $z$ also tend to 0 . The following lemma gives some estimations of these limits.

Lemma 2.1 If $|\operatorname{Im} z|<t$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z)\right| \leq \frac{4 e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t}}{\left(1-e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t}\right)^{2}\left(1-e^{2(|\operatorname{Im} z|-t)}\right)} \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $t \geq|\operatorname{Im} z|+2$, then $\left|\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z)\right|<5.5 e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t}$. For any $h \in \mathbb{N}$, if $t \geq|\operatorname{Im} z|+h+2$, then $\left|\mathbf{H}_{I}^{(h)}(t, z)\right|<15 \sqrt{h} e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t}$.

Proof From (2.4), if $|\operatorname{Im} z|<t$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z)\right| & =\left|\sum_{k=0}^{\infty}\left(\frac{e^{(2 k+1) t}+e^{i z}}{e^{(2 k+1) t}-e^{i z}}+\frac{e^{-(2 k+1) t}+e^{i z}}{e^{-(2 k+1) t}-e^{i z}}\right)\right| \\
& =\left|\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{2 \sin (z)}{\cosh ((2 k+1) t)-\cos (z)}\right| \\
& \leq \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{2 e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|}}{\cosh ((2 k+1) t)-\cosh (|\operatorname{Im} z|)} \tag{2.15}
\end{align*}
$$

Here we use the facts that $|\sin (z)| \leq e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|}$ and $|\cos (z)| \leq \cosh (|\operatorname{Im} z|)<\cosh (t)$. Let $h_{0}=t-|\operatorname{Im} z|>0$. Then for $k \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \cosh ((2 k+1) t)-\cosh (|\operatorname{Im} z|) \\
& \quad=2 \sinh _{2}((2 k+1) t+|\operatorname{Im} z|) \sinh _{2}((2 k+1) t-|\operatorname{Im} z|)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =\frac{1}{2} e^{((2 k+1) t+|\operatorname{Im} z|) / 2}\left(1-e^{-(2 k+1) t-|\operatorname{Im} z|}\right) e^{((2 k+1) t-|\operatorname{Im} z|) / 2}\left(1-e^{-(2 k+1) t+|\operatorname{Im} z|}\right) \\
& \geq \frac{1}{2} e^{((2 k+1) t+|\operatorname{Im} z|) / 2} e^{((2 k+1) t-|\operatorname{Im} z|) / 2}\left(1-e^{-h_{0}}\right)^{2}=\frac{1}{2} e^{(2 k+1) t}\left(1-e^{-h_{0}}\right)^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

So the RHS of (2.15) is not bigger than

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{4 e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|} e^{-(2 k+1) t}}{\left(1-e^{-h_{0}}\right)^{2}}=\frac{4 e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t}}{\left(1-e^{-h_{0}}\right)^{2}\left(1-e^{-2 t}\right)} \leq \frac{4 e^{-h_{0}}}{\left(1-e^{-h_{0}}\right)^{2}\left(1-e^{-2 h_{0}}\right)}
$$

So we proved (2.14).
If $t \geq|\operatorname{Im} z|+2$, then $4 /\left(\left(1-e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t}\right)^{2}\left(1-e^{2(|\operatorname{Im} z|-t)}\right)\right) \leq 4 /\left(\left(1-e^{-2}\right)^{2}(1-\right.$ $\left.\left.e^{-4}\right)\right)<5.5$. From (2.14) we have $\left|\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z)\right|<5.5 e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t}$. Now we assume $h \in \mathbb{N}$ and $t \geq|\operatorname{Im} z|+h+2$. Then for any $w \in \mathbb{C}$ with $|w-z|=h$, we have $t \geq|\operatorname{Im} w|+2$, so $\left|\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, w)\right|<5.5 e^{|\operatorname{Im} w|-t} \leq 5.5 e^{h} e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t}$. From Cauchy's integral formula and Stirling's formula, we have

$$
\left|\mathbf{H}_{I}^{(h)}(t, z)\right| \leq 5.5 \frac{h!e^{h}}{h^{h}} e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t} \leq 5.5 \sqrt{2 \pi h} e^{1 /(12 h)} e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t}<15 \sqrt{h} e^{|\operatorname{Im} z|-t}
$$

## 3 Loewner equations

### 3.1 Whole-plane Loewner equation

To motivate the definition of the whole-plane Loewner equation, let's start with the well-known radial Leowner equation with reflection about the unit circle $\mathbb{T}$. Let $T \in$ $(0, \infty]$. Let $\beta_{I}:[0, T) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ be a simple curve with $\beta_{I}(0) \in \mathbb{T}$ and $\beta_{I}(t) \in \mathbb{C} \backslash \overline{\mathbb{D}}$ for $t \in(0, T)$. Let $K_{I}(t)=\overline{\mathbb{D}} \cup \beta_{I}((0, t]), 0 \leq t<T$. Then each $K_{I}(t)$ is a hull in $\mathbb{C}$, and the capacity increases continuously in $t$. After a time-change, we may assume that $\operatorname{cap}\left(K_{I}(t)\right)=e^{t}, 0 \leq t<T$. Let $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ be the unique conformal map from $\mathbb{C} \backslash K_{I}(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{C} \backslash \overline{\mathbb{D}}$ with normalization $\lim _{z \rightarrow \infty} z / g_{I}(t, z)=e^{t}$. It turns out that there is $\xi \in C([0, T))$ such that $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ satisfies the radial Loewner equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} g_{I}(t, z)=g_{I}(t, z) \frac{e^{i \xi(t)}+g_{I}(t, z)}{e^{i \xi(t)}-g_{I}(t, z)} \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with initial value $g_{I}(0, z)=z$. In fact, each $g_{I}(t, \cdot)^{-1}$ extends continuously to $\mathbb{T}$, and maps $e^{i \xi(t)}$ to $\beta_{I}(t)$, and the function $\xi$ is determined by $\beta_{I}$ up to an integer multiple of $2 \pi$.

Let $a \in \mathbb{R}$ and $T \in(a, \infty]$. Now suppose a simple curve $\beta_{I}:[a, T) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ satisfies $\beta_{I}(0) \in e^{a} \mathbb{T}$ and $\beta_{I}(t) \in \mathbb{C} \backslash e^{a} \overline{\mathbb{D}}$ for $t \in(a, T)$. Let $K_{I}(t)=e^{a} \overline{\mathbb{D}} \cup \beta_{I}((a, t])$, $a \leq t<T$. Assume that $\operatorname{cap}\left(K_{I}(t)\right)=e^{t}, a \leq t<T$. Then the mappings $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ determined by $K_{I}(t)$ also satisfy (3.1) for some $\xi \in C([a, T))$, and the initial value now is $g_{I}(0, z)=e^{-a} z$. Let $a$ tend to $-\infty$, then the initial point of $\beta_{I}$ approaches 0 .

So let's consider a simple curve $\beta_{I}:[-\infty, T) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ with $\beta_{I}(-\infty)=0$. Let $K_{I}(t)=$ $\beta_{I}([-\infty, t]),-\infty<t<T$. Assume that $\operatorname{cap}\left(K_{I}(t)\right)=e^{t},-\infty<t<T$. Then the mappings $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ determined by $K_{I}(t)$ still satisfy (3.1) for some $\xi \in C((-\infty, T))$, and they have an asymptotic initial value at $t=-\infty$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{t \rightarrow-\infty} e^{t} g_{I}(t, z)=z, \quad z \in \mathbb{C} \backslash\{0\} \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

For this reason, we also call (3.1) the whole-plane Loewner equation.
We now reverse the above process. Let $T \in(-\infty, \infty]$ and $\xi \in C((-\infty, T))$. Let $g_{I}(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<T$, be the solution of the whole-plane Loewner equation (3.1) with the asymptotic initial value (3.2). Note that for each fixed $z$, (3.1) is an ODE in $t$. For each $t \in(-\infty, T)$, let $K_{I}(t)$ be the set of $z \in \mathbb{C}$ at which $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ is not defined. Then $K_{I}(t)$ and $g_{I}(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<T$, are called the whole-plane Loewner hulls and maps driven by $\xi$.

Remark Since the asymptotic initial value is used, the existence and uniqueness of the solution is not trivial. From Proposition 4.21 in [8] we know that $K_{I}(t)$ and $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ exist and are determined by $e^{i \xi(s)},-\infty<s \leq t$. Moreover, each $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\widehat{\mathbb{C}} \backslash K_{I}(t)$ conformally onto $\widehat{\mathbb{C}} \backslash \overline{\mathbb{D}}$ and fixes $\infty$, and $g_{I}(t, z)=e^{-t} z+O(1)$ near $\infty$. So each $K_{I}(t)$ is a hull in $\mathbb{C}$ with $\operatorname{cap}\left(K_{I}(t)\right)=e^{t}$. The whole-plane Loewner equation can be viewed as a mapping which takes the driving function $\xi$ to a family of hulls $\left(K_{I}(t)\right)$ or conformal maps $\left(g_{I}(t, \cdot)\right)$. The family $\left(K_{I}(t)\right)$ increases in $t$, but may not be simple curves.

We say that $\xi$ generates a whole-plane Loewner trace $\beta_{I}$ if

$$
\beta_{I}(t):=\lim _{|z|>1, z \rightarrow e^{i \xi(t)}} g_{I}(t, \cdot)^{-1}(z)
$$

exists for $t \in(-\infty, T)$, and if $\beta_{I}(t),-\infty \leq t<T$, is a continuous curve in $\mathbb{C}$. Such a trace, if it exists, starts from 0 , i.e., $\beta_{I}(-\infty):=\lim _{t \rightarrow-\infty} \beta_{I}(t)=0$. The trace is called simple if $\beta_{I}(t),-\infty \leq t<T$, has no self-intersection. If $\xi$ generates a whole-plane Loewner trace $\beta_{I}$, then for each $t, \mathbb{C} \backslash K_{I}(t)$ is the unbounded component of $\mathbb{C} \backslash \beta_{I}([-\infty, t])$. In particular, if $\beta_{I}$ is simple, then $K_{I}(t)=\beta_{I}([-\infty, t])$ for each $t$, and we recover an earlier picture.

Let $\kappa>0$. A pre-( $\mathbb{T} ; \kappa)$-Brownian motion a.s. generates a whole-plane Loewner trace, which is called a standard whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace. The trace goes from 0 to $\infty$, i.e., $\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \beta_{I}(t)=\infty$. If $\kappa \in(0,4]$, the trace is simple. If the driving function is the sum of a pre-( $\mathbb{T} ; \kappa)$-Brownian motion and $s_{0} t$ for some constant $s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$, then we also get a whole-plane Loewner trace, which is called a standard whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{0}\right)$ trace. The trace still goes from 0 to $\infty$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$, and is simple when $\kappa \leq 4$. For any $z_{1} \neq z_{2} \in \widehat{\mathbb{C}}$, we may define whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}_{\kappa}$ and $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{0}\right)$ trace from $z_{1}$ to $z_{2}$ via Möbius transform.

Remark Whole-plane $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ is related to radial SLE in the way that, if $T \in \mathbb{R}$ is fixed, then conditioned on $K_{I}(t),-\infty<t \leq T$, the curve $\beta_{I}(T+t), t \geq 0$, is the radial $\operatorname{SLE}_{\kappa}$ trace in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}} \backslash K_{I}(T)$ from $\beta_{I}(T)$ to $\infty$. Whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{0}\right)$ is related to radial
$\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa,-s_{0}\right)$ (the radial Loewner process driven by $\left.\sqrt{\kappa} B(t)-s_{0} t\right)$ in a similar way. The additional negative sign is due to the reflection about $\mathbb{T}$.

We will need the following inverted whole-plane Loewner process, which grows from $\infty$. For $-\infty<t<T$, let $K(t)=I_{0}\left(K_{I}(t)\right)$ and $g(t, \cdot)=I_{0} \circ g_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ I_{0}$. Then for each $t, g(t, \cdot)$ maps $\widehat{\mathbb{C}} \backslash K(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{D}$ and fixes 0 . Moreover, $g(t, \cdot)$ satisfies (3.1) with some initial value at $-\infty$. We call $K(t)$ and $g(t, \cdot)$ the inverted whole-plane Loewner hulls and maps driven by $\xi$. If $\xi$ generates a wholeplane Loewner trace $\beta_{I}$, then $\beta(t):=I_{0} \circ \beta_{I}(t)$ is a continuous curve in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ that satisfies $\beta(-\infty)=\infty$ and $\beta(t)=\lim _{\mathbb{D} \ni z \rightarrow e^{i \xi(t)}} g(t, \cdot)^{-1}(z),-\infty<t<T$. We call $\beta$ the inverted whole-plane Loewner trace driven by $\xi$.

Let $K_{I}(t)$ and $g_{I}(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<T$, be as before. Let $\widetilde{K}_{I}(t)=\left(e^{i}\right)^{-1}\left(K_{I}(t)\right)$, $-\infty<t<T$. It is easy to see that there exists a unique family $\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<T$, such that, $\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{C} \backslash \widetilde{K}_{I}(t)$ conformally onto $-\mathbb{H}, e^{i} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)=g_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ e^{i}$, and $\widetilde{g}_{I}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)=\cot _{2}\left(\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)-\xi(t)\right), \quad-\infty<t<T, \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the initial value at $-\infty$ :

$$
\lim _{t \rightarrow-\infty}\left(\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)-i t\right)=z
$$

Then we call $\widetilde{K}_{I}(t)$ and $\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ the covering whole-plane Loewner hulls and maps driven by $\xi$.

For $-\infty<t<T$, let $\widetilde{K}(t)=\widetilde{I}_{0}\left(\widetilde{K}_{I}(t)\right)$ and $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)=\widetilde{I}_{0} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ \widetilde{I}_{0}$. Then $\widetilde{K}(t)=\left(e^{i}\right)^{-1}(K(t))$ and $e^{i} \circ \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)=g(t, \cdot) \circ e^{i}$. We call $\widetilde{K}(t)$ and $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ the inverted covering whole-plane Loewner hulls and maps driven by $\xi$. Then for each $t \in(-\infty, T), \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{C} \backslash \widetilde{K}(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{H}$, and satisfies (3.3) for $t \in$ $(-\infty, T)$ and the initial value at $-\infty$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{t \rightarrow-\infty}(\widetilde{g}(t, z)+i t)=z \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 3.2 Annulus Loewner equation

The annulus Loewner equation was introduced in [17] to describe curves in a doubly connected domain. Let $p \in(0, \infty)$. To motivate the definition, we consider a simple curve $\beta(t), 0 \leq t<T$, with $\beta(0) \in \mathbb{T}$ and $\beta(t) \in \mathbb{A}_{p}, 0<t<T$. Let $K(t)=$ $\beta((0, t]), 0 \leq t<T$. Then each $K(t)$ is a hull in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$, and cap $\mathbb{A}_{p}(K(t))$ increases continuously. After a time-change, we may assume that $\operatorname{cap}_{\mathbb{A}_{p}}(K(t))=t$ for all $t$. For each $t$, there exists $g(t, \cdot)$, which maps $\mathbb{A}_{p} \backslash K(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{A}_{p-t}$, and maps $\mathbb{T}_{p}$ onto $\mathbb{T}_{p-t}$. Such $g(t, \cdot)$ is unique only up to a rotation. There are different ways to make $g(t, \cdot)$ unique. For example, we may fix a point on $w_{0} \in \mathbb{T}_{p}$ and require that $e^{-t} g(t, \cdot)$ fixes $w_{0}$. The normalization used here does not have a clear geometric meaning. The work in [17] shows that the $g(t, \cdot)$ can be chosen to satisfy annulus Loewner equation of modulus $p$ for some $\xi \in C([0, T))$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} g(t, z)=g(t, z) \mathbf{S}\left(p-t, g(t, z) / e^{i \xi(t)}\right), \quad 0 \leq t<T, \quad g(0, z)=z \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

We now reverse the above process. Let $\xi \in C([0, T))$ where $0<T \leq p$. Let $g(t, \cdot)$ be the solution of the $\operatorname{ODE}$ (3.5). For $0 \leq t<T$, let $K(t)$ denote the set of $z \in \mathbb{A}_{p}$ such that the solution $g(s, z)$ blows up before or at time $t$. We call $K(t)$ and $g(t, \cdot)$, $0 \leq t<T$, the annulus Loewner hulls and maps of modulus $p$ driven by $\xi$. It turns out that, fo each $t, K(t)$ is a hull in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ with $\operatorname{cap}_{\mathbb{A}_{p}}(K(t))=t$, and $g(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{A}_{p} \backslash K(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{A}_{p-t}$ and maps $\mathbb{T}_{p}$ onto $\mathbb{T}_{p-t}$. To see that $g(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{T}_{p}$ onto $\mathbb{T}_{p-t}$, one may note that (3.5) implies that $\partial_{t} \ln |g(t, z)|=\operatorname{Re} \mathbf{S}\left(p-t, g(t, z) / e^{i \xi(t)}\right)$, and $\operatorname{Re} \mathbf{S}(r, \cdot) \equiv 1$ on $\mathbb{T}_{r}$ because $\operatorname{Im} \mathbf{H}(r, \cdot) \equiv-1$ on $\mathbb{R}_{r}$ and $\mathbf{H}(r, z)=-i \mathbf{S}\left(t, e^{i}(z)\right)$.

We say that $\xi$ generates an annulus Loewner trace $\beta$ of modulus $p$ if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta(t):=\lim _{\mathbb{A}_{p-t} \ni z \rightarrow e^{i \xi(t)}} g(t, \cdot)^{-1}(z) \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

exists for all $t \in[0, T)$, and if $\beta(t), 0 \leq t<T$, is a continuous curve. The curve lies in $\mathbb{A}_{p} \cup \mathbb{T}$ and starts from $e^{i \xi(0)} \in \mathbb{T}$. The trace is called simple if $\beta$ has no selfintersection and stays inside $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ for $t>0$. In that case, we have $K(t)=\beta((0, t])$ for each $t$, and recover the picture at the beginning of this subsection.

Remark 1. If $\xi$ generates an annulus Loewner trace $\beta$, then for each $t, \mathbb{A}_{p} \backslash K(t)$ is the component of $\mathbb{A}_{p} \backslash \beta((0, t])$ whose boundary contains $\mathbb{T}_{p}$. If the trace is simple, then $K(t)=\beta((0, t])$ for each $t$.
2. Let $\beta(t), 0 \leq t<T$, be a simple curve with $\beta(0) \in \mathbb{T}$ and $\beta(t) \in \mathbb{A}_{p}$ for $0<t<T$. If it is parameterized by capacity in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$, i.e., $\operatorname{cap}_{\mathbb{A}_{p}}(\beta((0, t]))=t$ for each $t$, then it is an annulus Loewner trace of modulus $p$. In the general case, let $u(t)=\operatorname{cap}_{\mathbb{A}_{p}}(\beta((0, t]))$. Then $\beta\left(u^{-1}(t)\right)$ is an annulus Loewner trace of modulus $p$.
3. If $\xi(t)=\sqrt{\kappa} B(t), 0 \leq t<p$, then a.s. $\xi$ generates an annulus Loewner trace. If $\kappa \in(0,4]$, the trace is simple. From Girsanov theorem, the above still hold if $\xi$ is a semimartingale, whose stochastic part is $\sqrt{\kappa} B(t)$, and whose drift part is a continuously differentiable function.

The covering annulus Loewner equation of modulus $p$ driven by the above $\xi$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}(t, z)=\mathbf{H}(p-t, \widetilde{g}(t, z)-\xi(t)), \quad \widetilde{g}(0, z)=z \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $0 \leq t<T$, let $\widetilde{K}(t)$ denote the set of $z \in \mathbb{S}_{p}$ such that the solution $\widetilde{g}(s, z)$ blows up before or at time $t$. Then for $0 \leq t \lesssim T, \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{S}_{p} \backslash \widetilde{K}(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{S}_{p-t}$ and maps $\mathbb{R}_{p}$ onto $\mathbb{R}_{p-t}$. We call $\widetilde{K}(t)$ and $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot), 0 \leq t<T$, the covering annulus Loewner hulls and maps of modulus $p$ driven by $\xi$. Let $K(t)$ and $g(t, \cdot)$ be the notations appeared above. Then we have $\widetilde{K}(t)=\left(e^{i}\right)^{-1}(K(t))$ and $e^{i} \circ \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)=g(t, \cdot) \circ e^{i}$ for $0 \leq t<T$.

Since $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{R}_{p}$ onto $\mathbb{R}_{p-t}$ and $\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z)=\mathbf{H}(t, z+i t)+i$, we have

$$
\partial_{t} \operatorname{Re} \widetilde{g}(t, z)=\mathbf{H}_{I}(p-t, \operatorname{Re} \widetilde{g}(t, z)-\xi(t)), \quad z \in \mathbb{R}_{p}
$$

Differentiating the above formula w.r.t. $z$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}^{\prime}(t, z)=\widetilde{g}^{\prime}(t, z) \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}(p-t, \operatorname{Re} \tilde{g}(t, z)-\xi(t)), \quad z \in \mathbb{R}_{p} \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $\xi$ generates an annulus Loewner trace $\beta$ of modulus $p$, then a.s.

$$
\widetilde{\beta}(t):=\lim _{\mathbb{S}_{p-t} \ni z \rightarrow \xi(t)} \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)^{-1}(z)
$$

exists for $0 \leq t<T$, and $\widetilde{\beta}(t), \underset{\widetilde{\beta}}{0} \leq t<T$, is a continuous curve in $\mathbb{S}_{p} \cup \mathbb{R}$ started from $\widetilde{\beta}(0)=\xi(0) \in \mathbb{R}$. Such $\widetilde{\beta}$ is called the covering annulus Loewner trace of modulus $p$ driven by $\xi$. And we have $\beta=e^{i} \circ \widetilde{\beta}$. If $\beta$ is a simple trace, then $\widetilde{\beta}$ has no self-intersection, stays inside $\mathbb{S}_{p}$ for $t>0$, and $\widetilde{K}(t)=\widetilde{\beta}((0, t])+2 \pi \mathbb{Z}$ for each $t$.

Let $K_{I}(t)=I_{p}(K(t)), g_{I}(t, \cdot)=I_{p-t} \circ g(t, \cdot) \circ I_{p}, \widetilde{K}_{I}(t)=\widetilde{I}_{p}(\widetilde{K}(t))$, and $\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)=\widetilde{I}_{p-t} \circ \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot) \circ \widetilde{I}_{p}$. Then $K_{I}(t)$ is a hull in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ with $\operatorname{cap}_{\mathbb{A}_{p}}\left(K_{I}(t)\right)=t$, $\widetilde{K}^{\text {and }} g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{A}_{p} \backslash K_{I}(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{A}_{p-t}$ and maps $\mathbb{T}$ onto $\mathbb{T}$. Moreover, $\widetilde{K}_{I}(t)=\left(e^{i}\right)^{-1}\left(K_{I}(t)\right), \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{S}_{p} \backslash \widetilde{K}_{I}(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{S}_{p-t}$, maps $\mathbb{R}$ onto $\mathbb{R}$, satisfies $e^{i} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)=g_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ e^{i}$, and the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)=\mathbf{H}_{I}\left(p-t, \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)-\xi(t)\right), \quad \widetilde{g}(0, z)=z \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

We call $K_{I}(t)$ and $g_{I}(t, \cdot)\left(\operatorname{resp} . \widetilde{K}_{I}(t)\right.$ and $\left.\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)\right)$ the inverted annulus (resp. inverted covering annulus) Loewner hulls and maps of modulus $p$ driven by $\xi$. The inverted hulls grow from the smaller circle $\mathbb{T}_{p}$ instead of the unit circle $\mathbb{T}$.

### 3.3 Disc Loewner equation

We now review the definition of the disc Loewner equation, which is used to describe a simple curve in a simply connected domain started from an interior point. The relation between the disc Loewner equation and the annulus Loewner equation is similar to that between the whole-plane Loewner equation and the radial Loewner equation. Intuitively, one considers the inverted annulus Loewner equations of modulus $p$ so that the hulls start from $\mathbb{T}_{p}$, and then lets $p \rightarrow \infty$.

Let $T \in(-\infty, 0]$ and $\xi \in C((-\infty, T))$. Let $g_{I}(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<T$, be the solution of

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{t} g_{I}(t, z) & =g_{I}(t, z) \mathbf{S}_{I}\left(-t, g_{I}(t, z) / e^{i \xi(t)}\right), \quad-\infty<t<T \\
\lim _{t \rightarrow-\infty} g_{I}(t, z) & =z, \quad \forall z \in \overline{\mathbb{D}} \backslash\{0\} . \tag{3.10}
\end{align*}
$$

For each $t \in(-\infty, T)$, let $K_{I}(t)$ be the set of $z \in \mathbb{D}$ at which $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ is not defined. Then $K_{I}(t)$ and $g_{I}(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<T$, are called the disc Loewner hulls and maps driven by $\xi$.

Remark From Proposition 4.1 and 4.2 in [17] we know that $K_{I}(t)$ and $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ exist and are determined by $e^{i \xi(s)},-\infty<s \leq t$. Moreover, each $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{D} \backslash K_{I}(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{A}_{-t}$ and maps $\mathbb{T}$ onto $\mathbb{T}$.

We say that $\xi$ generates a disc Loewner trace $\beta$ if

$$
\beta_{I}(t):=\lim _{\mathbb{A}_{-t} \ni z \rightarrow e^{t+i \xi(t)}} g_{I}(t, \cdot)^{-1}(z)
$$

exists for every $t \in(-\infty, T)$, and if $\beta_{I}(t),-\infty \leq t<T$, is a continuous curve in $\mathbb{D}$ with $\beta_{I}(-\infty)=0$. The trace is called simple if it has no self-intersection. If $\xi$ generates a disc Loewner trace $\beta_{I}$, then for each $t, \mathbb{C} \backslash K_{I}(t)$ is the unbounded component of $\mathbb{C} \backslash \beta_{I}([-\infty, t])$. In particular, if $\beta_{I}$ is simple, then $K_{I}(t)=\beta_{I}([-\infty, t])$ for each $t$.

Let $\beta_{I}(t),-\infty \leq t<T$, be a simple curve in $\mathbb{D}$ with $\beta_{I}(-\infty)=0$. If it is parameterized by capacity in $\mathbb{D}$, i.e., $\bmod \left(\mathbb{D} \backslash \beta_{I}([-\infty, t])\right)=-t$ for each $t$, then $\beta_{I}$ is a disc Loewner trace. In the general case, let $u(t)=-\bmod \left(\mathbb{D} \backslash \beta_{I}([-\infty, t])\right)$, then $\beta_{I}\left(u^{-1}(t)\right)$ is a disc Loewner trace.

We will need the following inverted disc Loewner process, which grows from $\infty$. For $-\infty<t<T$, let $K(t)=I_{0}\left(K_{I}(t)\right)$ and $g(t, \cdot)=I_{-t} \circ g(t, \cdot) \circ I_{0}$. Then each $g(t, \cdot)$ maps $\widehat{\mathbb{C}} \backslash \overline{\mathbb{D}} \backslash K(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{A}_{-t}$ and maps $\mathbb{T}$ onto $\mathbb{T}_{-t}$. Moreover, $g(t, \cdot)$ satisfies (3.10) with $\mathbf{S}_{I}$ replaced by $\mathbf{S}$. We call $K(t)$ and $g(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<T$, the inverted disc Loewner hulls and maps driven by $\xi$. If $\xi$ generates a disc Loewner trace $\beta_{I}$, then $\beta:=I_{0} \circ \beta_{I}$ is called the inverted disc Loewner trace driven by $\xi$.

The covering disc Loewner hulls and maps are defined as follows. Let $\widetilde{K}_{I}(t)=$ $\left(e^{i}\right)^{-1}\left(K_{I}(t)\right),-\infty<t<T$. There is a unique family $\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<T$, which satisfy that, for each $t, \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{H} \backslash \widetilde{K}_{I}(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{S}_{-t}$ and maps $\mathbb{R}$ onto $\mathbb{R}, e^{i} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)=g_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ e^{i}$, and the following hold:

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z) & =\mathbf{H}_{I}\left(-t, \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)-\xi(t)\right) ;  \tag{3.11}\\
\lim _{t \rightarrow-\infty} \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z) & =z . \tag{3.12}
\end{align*}
$$

We call $\widetilde{K}_{I}(t)$ and $\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ the covering disc Loewner hulls and maps driven by $\xi$. Let $\widetilde{K}(t)=\widetilde{I}_{0}\left(\widetilde{K}_{I}(t)\right)$ and $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)=\widetilde{I}_{-t} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ \widetilde{I}_{0}$. Then $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ maps $-\mathbb{H} \backslash \widetilde{K}(t)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{S}_{-t}$, maps $\mathbb{R}$ onto $\mathbb{R}_{-t}, e^{i} \circ \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)=g(t, \cdot) \circ e^{i}$, and satisfies $\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}(t, z)=\mathbf{H}(-t, \widetilde{g}(t, z)-\xi(t))$. We call $\widetilde{K}(t)$ and $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ the inverted covering disc Loewner hulls and maps driven by $\xi$.

Remark Now we summarize the conformal maps that appear in the this section so far. The relations between a (inverted) whole-plane, annulus, or disc Loewner map $g(t, \cdot)$ or $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ and its corresponding covering map $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ or $\tilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ are $g(t, \cdot) \circ e^{i}=$ $e^{i} \circ \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ and $g_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ e^{i}=e^{i} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)$. The relation between the inverted pair $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ and $\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ depends on the three cases. For the whole-plane Loewner maps,

$$
\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot): \mathbb{C} \backslash \widetilde{K}_{I}(t) \xrightarrow{\text { Conf }}-\mathbb{H}, \quad \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot): \mathbb{C} \backslash \widetilde{K}(t) \xrightarrow{\text { Conf }} \mathbb{H}, \quad \widetilde{I}_{0} \circ \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)=\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ \widetilde{I}_{0} .
$$

For the annulus Loewner maps of modulus $p$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot):\left(\mathbb{S}_{p} \backslash \widetilde{K}(t) ; \mathbb{R}_{p}\right) \xrightarrow{\operatorname{Conf}}\left(\mathbb{S}_{p-t} ; \mathbb{R}_{p-t}\right), \quad \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot):\left(\mathbb{S}_{p} \backslash \widetilde{K}_{I}(t) ; \mathbb{R}\right) \xrightarrow{\operatorname{Conf}}\left(\mathbb{S}_{p-t} ; \mathbb{R}\right), \\
& \widetilde{I}_{p-t} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)=\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot) \circ \widetilde{I}_{p}, \quad t \in[0, p) .
\end{aligned}
$$

For the disc Loewner maps,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot):\left(\mathbb{H} \backslash \widetilde{K}_{I}(t) ; \mathbb{R}\right) \xrightarrow{\operatorname{Conf}}\left(\mathbb{S}_{-t} ; \mathbb{R}\right), \quad \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot):(-\mathbb{H} \backslash \widetilde{K}(t) ; \mathbb{R}) \xrightarrow{\text { Conf }}\left(\mathbb{S}_{-t} ; \mathbb{R}_{-t}\right), \\
& \widetilde{I}_{-t} \circ \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)=\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ \widetilde{I}_{0}, \quad t \in(-\infty, 0) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The relation between $g(t, \cdot)$ and $g_{I}(t, \cdot)$ depends on the three cases in a similar way.

### 3.4 SLE with marked points

Definition 3.1 A covering crossing annulus drift function is a real valued $C^{0,1}$ differentiable function defined on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$. A covering crossing annulus drift function with period $2 \pi$ is called a crossing annulus drift function.

Definition 3.2 Suppose $\Lambda$ is a covering crossing annulus drift function. Let $\kappa>0$, $p>0$, and $x_{0}, y_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $\xi(t), 0 \leq t<p$, be the maximal solution to the SDE

$$
\begin{equation*}
d \xi(t)=\sqrt{\kappa} d B(t)+\Lambda\left(p-t, \xi(t)-\operatorname{Re} \widetilde{g}\left(t, y_{0}+p i\right)\right) d t, \quad \xi(0)=x_{0} \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot), 0 \leq t<p$, are the covering annulus Loewner maps of modulus $p$ driven by $\xi$. Then the covering annulus Loewner trace of modulus $p$ driven by $\xi$ is called the covering (crossing) annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ trace in $\mathbb{S}_{p}$ started from $x_{0}$ with marked point $y_{0}+p i$.

Definition 3.3 Suppose $\Lambda$ is a crossing annulus drift function. Let $\kappa>0, p>0$, $a \in \mathbb{T}$ and $b \in \mathbb{T}_{p}$. Choose $x_{0}, y_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$ such that $a=e^{i x_{0}}$ and $b=e^{-p+i y_{0}}$. Let $\xi(t)$, $0 \leq t<p$, be the maximal solution to (3.13). The annulus Loewner trace $\beta$ driven by $\xi$ is called the (crossing) annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ trace in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ started from $a$ with marked point $b$.

The above definition does not depend on the choices of $x_{0}$ and $y_{0}$ because $\Lambda$ has period $2 \pi$, and for any $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, the annulus Loewner objects driven by $\xi(t)+2 n \pi$ agree with those driven by $\xi(t)$.

A covering chordal-type annulus drift function is a real valued $C^{0,1}$ differentiable function defined on $(0, \infty) \times(\mathbb{R} \backslash 2 \pi \mathbb{Z})$. The word "covering" is omitted if the function has period $2 \pi$. If $\Lambda$ is a chordal-type annulus drift function, using the same idea, we may define the annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ processes, where the initial point $a=e^{i x_{0}}$ and marked point $b=e^{i y_{0}}$ both lie on $\mathbb{T}$ and are distinct. The driving function $\xi$ is the solution to (3.13) with $\operatorname{Re} \widetilde{g}\left(t, y_{0}+p i\right)$ replaced by $\widetilde{g}\left(t, y_{0}\right)$.

Via conformal maps, we can then define annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ process and trace in any doubly connected domain started from one boundary point with another boundary point being marked. Here $\Lambda$ is a chordal-type or crossing annulus drift function depending on whether or not the initial point and the marked point lie on the same boundary component. Let $\Lambda_{I}(p, x)=-\Lambda(p,-x)$, then $\Lambda_{I}$ is called the dual of $\Lambda$. If $W$ is a conjugate conformal map of $\mathbb{A}_{p}$, and $\Lambda_{I}$ is the dual of $\Lambda$, then $(W(K(t)))$ is an annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{I}\right)$ process in $W\left(\mathbb{A}_{p}\right)$ started from $W(a)$ with marked point $W(b)$.

Definition 3.4 Let $\kappa \geq 0, b \in \mathbb{T}$, and $\Lambda$ be a crossing annulus drift function. Choose $y_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$ such that $e^{i y_{0}}=b$. Let $B_{*}^{(\kappa)}(t), t \in \mathbb{R}$, be a pre-( $\left.\mathbb{T} ; \kappa\right)$-Brownian motion. Suppose $\xi(t),-\infty<t<0$, satisfies the following SDE with the meaning in Definition 2.2:

$$
d \xi(t)=d B_{*}^{(\kappa)}(t)+\Lambda\left(-t, \xi(t)-\tilde{g}_{I}\left(t, y_{0}\right)\right) d t, \quad-\infty<t<0,
$$

where $\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ are the disc Loewner maps driven by $\xi$. Then we call the disc Loewner trace driven by $\xi$ the disc $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ trace in $\mathbb{D}$ started from 0 with marked point $b$.

Via conformal maps, we can define disc $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ trace in any simply connected domain started from an interior point with a marked boundary point.

## 4 Coupling of two annulus SLE traces

The goal of this section is to prove Theorem 4.1 below, which says that when certain $\operatorname{PDE}$ is satisfied, we may couple two annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa ; \Lambda)$ processes such that they commute with each other. Although this result will not be used directly in the proof of the whole-plane reversibility, we prove this theorem because on the one hand, the result may be used in the future, and on the other hand, the proof will serve as a reference for a more complicated proof of the theorem about coupling two whole-plane SLE processes.

After some preparation in Sect. 4.1, the construction formally starts from Sect. 4.2, which resembles Section 3 of [10]. The extra complexity comes from the appearance of covering maps and inverted maps. Then we construct a two-dimensional local martingale $M$ in Sect. 4.3, which resembles Section 4 of [10]. In the same subsection, we derive the boundedness of $M$ when the two processes are stopped at some exiting time. In Sect. 4.4, we first construct local commutation couplings using $M$, then construct the global commutation coupling using the coupling technique, and finishes the proof.

Theorem 4.1 Let $\kappa>0$ and $s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Suppose $\Gamma$ is a positive $C^{1,2}$ differentiable function on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$ that satisfies

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{t} \Gamma & =\frac{\kappa}{2} \Gamma^{\prime \prime}+\mathbf{H}_{I} \Gamma^{\prime}+\left(\frac{3}{\kappa}-\frac{1}{2}\right) \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime} \Gamma ;  \tag{4.1}\\
\Gamma(t, x+2 \pi) & =e^{\frac{2 \pi s_{0}}{\kappa}} \Gamma(t, x), \quad t>0, x \in \mathbb{R} . \tag{4.2}
\end{align*}
$$

We call $\Gamma$ a partition function following Gregory Lawler's terminology in [20]. Let $\Lambda=\kappa \frac{\Gamma^{\prime}}{\Gamma}$. Then $\Lambda$ is a crossing annulus drift function. Let $\Lambda_{1}=\Lambda$ and $\Lambda_{2}$ be the dual of $\Lambda$. Then for any $p>0, a_{1}, a_{2} \in \mathbb{T}$, there is a coupling of two curves: $\beta_{1}(t)$, $0 \leq t<p$, and $\beta_{2}(t), 0 \leq t<p$, such that for $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$, the following hold.
(i) $\beta_{j}$ is an annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{j}\right)$ trace in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ started from $a_{j}$ with marked point $a_{I, k}:=I_{p}\left(a_{k}\right)$.
(ii) If $t_{k}<p$ is a stopping time w.r.t. $\left(\beta_{k}(t)\right)$, then conditioned on $\beta_{k}(t), 0 \leq t \leq t_{k}$, after a time-change, $\beta_{j}(t), 0 \leq t<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$ is the annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{j}\right)$ process in
a connected component of $\mathbb{A}_{p} \backslash I_{p}\left(\beta_{k}\left(\left(0, t_{k}\right]\right)\right)$ started from $a_{j}$ with marked point $I_{p}\left(\beta_{k}\left(t_{k}\right)\right)$, where $T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$ is the first time that $\beta_{j}$ visits $I_{p} \circ \beta_{k}\left(\left(0, t_{k}\right]\right)$, which is set to be $p$ if such time does not exist.

## Remark 1. The $\Lambda$ satisfies the PDE:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \Lambda=\frac{\kappa}{2} \Lambda^{\prime \prime}+\left(3-\frac{\kappa}{2}\right) \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime}+\Lambda \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}+\mathbf{H}_{I} \Lambda^{\prime}+\Lambda \Lambda^{\prime} . \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, if $\Lambda$ satisfies (4.3), then there is $\Gamma$ such that $\Lambda=\kappa \frac{\Gamma^{\prime}}{\Gamma}$ and (4.1) holds.
2. The theorem also holds for $\kappa=0$ if $\Lambda$ satisfies (4.3) with $\kappa=0$.

### 4.1 Transformations of PDE

Lemma 4.1 Let $\sigma, s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Suppose $\Gamma, \Psi$, and $\Psi_{s_{0}}$ arefunctions defined on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$, which satisfy $\Psi=\Gamma \Theta_{I}^{\frac{2}{\kappa}}, \Psi_{s}=\Gamma_{s} \Theta_{I}^{\frac{2}{\kappa}}$, and $\Psi_{s_{0}}(t, x)=e^{-\frac{s_{0} x}{\kappa}-\frac{s_{0} t}{2 \kappa}} \Psi(t, x)$. Then the following PDEs are equivalent:

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{t} \Gamma & =\frac{\kappa}{2} \Gamma^{\prime \prime}+\mathbf{H}_{I} \Gamma^{\prime}+\left(\sigma-\frac{1}{\kappa}+\frac{1}{2}\right) \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime} \Gamma ;  \tag{4.4}\\
\partial_{t} \Psi & =\frac{\kappa}{2} \Psi^{\prime \prime}+\sigma \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime} \Psi ;  \tag{4.5}\\
\partial_{t} \Psi_{s_{0}} & =\frac{\kappa}{2} \Psi_{s_{0}}^{\prime \prime}+s_{0} \Psi_{s_{0}}^{\prime}+\sigma \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime} \Psi_{s_{0}} . \tag{4.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof This follows from (2.5), (2.7), and some straightforward computations.
Remark When $\sigma=\frac{4}{\kappa}-1$, (4.4) agrees with (4.1).
Lemma 4.2 Let $\sigma, s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Suppose $\Psi_{s_{0}}$ is positive, has period $2 \pi$, and solves (4.6) in $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$. Then $\Psi_{s_{0}}(t, x) \rightarrow C$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$ for some constant $C>0$, uniformly in $x \in \mathbb{R}$.

Proof Fix $t_{0}>0$ and $x_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. For $0 \leq t<t_{0}$, let $X_{x_{0}}(t)=x_{0}+\sqrt{\kappa} B(t)+s t$ and

$$
M(t)=\Psi_{s_{0}}\left(t_{0}-t, X_{x_{0}}(t)\right) \exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{t} \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}\left(t_{0}-r, X_{x_{0}}(r)\right) d r\right) .
$$

From (4.6) and Itô's formula, $M(t), 0 \leq t<t_{0}$, is a local martingale. Since $\Psi_{s_{0}}$ and $\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}$ are continuous on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$ and have period $2 \pi$, we see that, for any $t_{1} \in\left(0, t_{0}\right]$, $M(t), 0 \leq t \leq t_{0}-t_{1}$, is uniformly bounded, so it is a bounded martingale. Thus,

$$
\begin{align*}
\Psi_{s_{0}}\left(t_{0}, x_{0}\right) & = \\
M(0) & =\mathbf{E}\left[\Psi_{s_{0}}\left(t_{1}, X_{x_{0}}\left(t_{0}-t_{1}\right)\right) \exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{t_{0}-t_{1}} \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}\left(t_{0}-r, X_{x_{0}}(r)\right) d r\right)\right] . \tag{4.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Now suppose $t_{0}>t_{1} \geq 3$. From Lemma 2.1, we see that,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{0}^{t_{0}-t_{1}}\left|\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}\left(t_{0}-r, X_{x_{0}}(r)\right)\right| d r \leq \int_{0}^{t_{0}-t_{1}} 15 e^{r-t_{0}} d r \leq 15 e^{-t_{1}} \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\varepsilon>0$. Choose $t_{1} \geq 3$ such that $15 \sigma e^{-t_{1}}<\varepsilon / 3$. For $t \in\left[t_{1}, \infty\right)$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}$, define

$$
\Psi_{s_{0}, t_{1}}(t, x)=\mathbf{E}\left[\Psi_{s_{0}}\left(t_{1}, X_{x}\left(t-t_{1}\right)\right)\right] .
$$

As $t \rightarrow \infty$, the distribution of $e^{i}\left(X_{x}\left(t-t_{1}\right)\right)$ tends to the uniform distribution on $\mathbb{T}$. Since $\Psi_{s_{0}}$ is positive, continuous, and has period $2 \pi$, we see that $\Psi_{s_{0}, t_{1}}(t, x) \rightarrow$ $\frac{1}{2 \pi} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} \Psi_{s_{0}}\left(t_{1}, x\right) d x>0$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$, uniformly in $x \in \mathbb{R}$. Thus, $\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \ln \left(\Psi_{s_{0}, t_{1}}\right)$ converges uniformly in $x \in \mathbb{R}$. So there is $t_{2}>t_{1}$ such that if $t_{a}, t_{b} \geq t_{2}$ and $x_{a}, x_{b} \in \mathbb{R}$, then $\left|\ln \left(\Psi_{t_{1}}\left(t_{a}, x_{a}\right)\right)-\ln \left(\Psi_{t_{1}}\left(t_{b}, x_{b}\right)\right)\right|<\varepsilon / 3$. From (4.7) and (4.8) we see that

$$
\left|\ln \left(\Psi_{s_{0}}(t, x)\right)-\ln \left(\Psi_{s_{0}, t_{1}}(t, x)\right)\right| \leq 15 \sigma e^{-t_{1}}<\varepsilon / 3, \quad t \geq t_{1}, x \in \mathbb{R}
$$

Thus, $\left|\ln \left(\Psi_{s_{0}}\left(t_{a}, x_{a}\right)\right)-\ln \left(\Psi_{s_{0}}\left(t_{b}, x_{b}\right)\right)\right|<\varepsilon$ if $t_{a}, t_{b} \geq t_{2}$ and $x_{a}, x_{b} \in \mathbb{R}$. So $\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \ln \left(\Psi_{s_{0}}\right)$ converges uniformly in $x \in \mathbb{R}$, which implies the conclusion of the lemma.

Lemma 4.3 Let $s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Suppose $\Gamma$ is positive, satisfies (4.2), and solves (4.4). Then there is $C>0$ such that $\Gamma_{s_{0}}(t, x):=C^{-1} e^{-\frac{s_{0} x}{\kappa}-\frac{s_{0}^{2} t}{2 \kappa}} \Gamma(t, x)$ has period $2 \pi$ and satisfies $\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \Gamma_{s_{0}}(t, x)=1$, uniformly in $x \in \mathbb{R}$.

Proof Let $\Psi_{s_{0}}$ be given by Lemma 4.1. Since $\Theta_{I}>0, \Psi_{s_{0}}$ is positive and solves (4.6). Since $\Gamma$ satisfies (4.2) and $\Theta_{I}$ has period $2 \pi, \Psi_{s_{0}}$ also has period $2 \pi$. From Lemma 4.2, there is $C>0$ such that $\Psi_{s_{0}} \rightarrow C$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$, uniformly in $x \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $\Gamma_{s_{0}}(t, x):=C^{-1} e^{-\frac{s_{0} x}{\kappa}-\frac{s_{0}^{2} t}{2 \kappa}} \Gamma(t, x)$. Then $\Gamma_{s_{0}}=C^{-1} \Psi_{s_{0}} \Theta_{I}(t, x)^{-\frac{2}{\kappa}}$. From (2.6), $\Theta_{I} \rightarrow 1$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$, uniformly in $x \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $\Theta_{I}$ has period $2 \pi$, we get the desired conclusion.

### 4.2 Ensemble

Let $p>0$ and $\xi_{1}, \xi_{2} \in C([0, p))$. For $j=1,2$, let $g_{j}(t, \cdot)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.g_{I, j}(t, \cdot)\right), 0 \leq t<p$, be the annulus (resp. inverted annulus) Loewner maps of modulus $p$ driven by $\xi_{j}$. Let $\tilde{g}_{j}(t, \cdot)$ and $\widetilde{g}_{I, j}(t, \cdot), 0 \leq t<p, j=1,2$, be the corresponding covering Loewner maps. Suppose $\xi_{j}$ generates a simple annulus Loewner trace of modulus $p$ : $\beta_{j}, j=1,2$. Let $\beta_{I, j}=I_{p} \circ \beta_{j}, j=1,2$, be the inverted trace. Define

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{D} & =\left\{\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right): \beta_{1}\left(\left(0, t_{1}\right]\right) \cap \beta_{I, 2}\left(\left(0, t_{2}\right]\right)=\emptyset\right\} \\
& =\left\{\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right): \beta_{I, 1}\left(\left(0, t_{1}\right]\right) \cap \beta_{2}\left(\left(0, t_{2}\right]\right)=\emptyset\right\} . \tag{4.9}
\end{align*}
$$

For $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \in \mathcal{D}$, we define

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) & =\bmod \left(\mathbb{A}_{p} \backslash \beta_{1}\left(\left[0, t_{1}\right]\right) \backslash \beta_{I, 2}\left(\left[0, t_{2}\right]\right)\right) \\
& =\bmod \left(\mathbb{A}_{p} \backslash \beta_{I, 1}\left(\left[0, t_{1}\right]\right) \backslash \beta_{2}\left(\left[0, t_{2}\right]\right)\right) . \tag{4.10}
\end{align*}
$$

Fix any $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$ and $t_{k} \in[0, p)$. Let $T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$ be the maximal number such that for any $t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, we have $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \in \mathcal{D}$. As $t_{j} \rightarrow T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)^{-}$, the spherical distance between $\beta_{j}\left(\left(0, t_{j}\right]\right)$ and $\beta_{I, k}\left(\left(0, t_{k}\right]\right)$ tends to 0 , so $\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \rightarrow 0$. For $0 \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, let $\beta_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)=g_{I, k}\left(t_{k}, \beta_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)$. Then $\beta_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right), 0 \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, is a simple curve that starts from $g_{I, k}\left(t_{k}, e^{i \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)}\right) \in \mathbb{T}$, and stays inside $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ for $t_{j}>0$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
v_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)=\operatorname{cap}_{\mathbb{A}_{p-t_{k}}}\left(\beta_{j, t_{k}}\left(\left(0, t_{j}\right]\right)\right)=p-t_{k}-\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $v_{j, t_{k}}$ is continuous and increasing and maps $\left[0, T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)\right)$ onto $\left[0, S_{j, t_{k}}\right)$ for some $S_{j, t_{k}} \in\left(0, p-t_{k}\right]$. Since $\mathrm{m} \rightarrow 0$ as $t_{j} \rightarrow T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right), S_{j, t_{k}}=p-t_{k}$. Then $\gamma_{j, t_{k}}(t):=\beta_{j, t_{k}}\left(v_{j, t_{k}}^{-1}(t)\right), 0 \leq t<p-t_{k}$, are the annulus Loewner trace of modulus $p-t_{k}$ driven by some $\zeta_{j, t_{k}} \in C\left(\left[0, p-t_{k}\right)\right)$. Let $\gamma_{I, j, t_{k}}(t)$ be the corresponding inverted annulus Loewner trace. Let $h_{j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$ and $h_{I, j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$ be the corresponding annulus and inverted annulus Loewner maps. Let $\widetilde{h}_{j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$, and $\widetilde{h}_{I, j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$ be the corresponding covering maps.

For $0 \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, let $\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right), \beta_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right), g_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right), g_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right), \widetilde{g}_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$, and $\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$ be the time-changes of $\zeta_{j, t_{k}}(t), \gamma_{I, j, t_{k}}(t), h_{j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot), h_{I, j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot), \widetilde{h}_{j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$, and $\widetilde{h}_{I, j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$, respectively, via the map $v_{j, t_{k}}$. For example, this means that $\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)=$ $\zeta_{j, t_{k}}\left(v_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)$ and $g_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)=h_{j, t_{k}}\left(v_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right), \cdot\right)$.

For $0 \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, let

$$
\begin{align*}
& G_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)=g_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \circ g_{I, k}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right) \circ g_{j}\left(t_{j}, \cdot \cdot\right)^{-1},  \tag{4.12}\\
& \widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)=\widetilde{g}_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{I, k}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{j}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)^{-1} . \tag{4.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Then $G_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \operatorname{maps} \mathbb{A}_{p-t_{j}} \backslash g_{j}\left(t_{j}, \beta_{I, k}\left(\left(0, t_{k}\right]\right)\right)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{A}_{\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)}$ and maps $\mathbb{T}$ onto $\mathbb{T} ; e^{i} \circ \widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)=G_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \circ e^{i}$; and $\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$ maps $\mathbb{R}$ onto $\mathbb{R}$. Since $\gamma_{j, t_{k}}(t)=\beta_{j, t_{k}}\left(v_{j, t_{k}}^{-1}(t)\right)$, from (3.6) and a similar formula for $\gamma$, we find that $e^{i \xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)}=G_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, e^{i \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)}\right)$ for $0 \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$. So there is $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)=\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)+2 n \pi$ for $0 \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$. Since $\zeta_{j, t_{k}}+2 n \pi$ generates the same annulus Loewner hulls as $\zeta_{j, t_{k}}$, we may choose $\zeta_{j, t_{k}}$ such that for $0 \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)=\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right) \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $0 \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, let

$$
\begin{align*}
& A_{j, h}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{j}}^{(h)}\left(t_{k}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right), \quad h=1,2,3,  \tag{4.15}\\
& A_{j, S}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\frac{A_{j, 3}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)}{A_{j, 1}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)}-\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{A_{j, 2}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)}{A_{j, 1}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)}\right)^{2} . \tag{4.16}
\end{align*}
$$

Then $A_{j, S}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)$ is the Schwarzian derivative of $\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right)$ at $\xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)$. A standard argument using Lemma 2.1 in [17] shows that, for $0 \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
v_{j, t_{k}}^{\prime}\left(t_{j}\right)=\left|G_{I, k, t_{k}}^{\prime}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)\right|^{2}=\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}^{\prime}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)^{2}=A_{j, 1}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)^{2} \tag{4.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

so from (4.11) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{j} \mathrm{~m}=-A_{j, 1}^{2} . \tag{4.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, for $0 \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, z\right) & =A_{j, 1}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)^{2} \mathbf{H}\left(\mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right), \widetilde{g}_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, z\right)-\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)\right) ;  \tag{4.19}\\
\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, z\right) & =A_{j, 1}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)^{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}\left(\mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right), \widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, z\right)-\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)\right) . \tag{4.20}
\end{align*}
$$

From (4.13) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{j}\left(t_{j}, z\right)=\widetilde{g}_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{I, k}\left(t_{k}, z\right) \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Differentiate (4.21) w.r.t. $t_{j}$. Let $w=\widetilde{g}_{j}\left(t_{j}, z\right) \rightarrow \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)$. From (3.7), (4.14), (4.19), and (2.2) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)=-3 \widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}^{\prime \prime}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)=-3 A_{j, 2}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) . \tag{4.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Differentiate (4.21) w.r.t. $t_{j}$ and $z$, and let $w=\widetilde{g}_{j}\left(t_{j}, z\right) \rightarrow \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)$. Then we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial_{t} \widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}^{\prime}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)}{\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}^{\prime}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)}=\frac{1}{2} \cdot\left(\frac{A_{j, 2}}{A_{j, 1}}\right)^{2}-\frac{4}{3} \cdot \frac{A_{j, 3}}{A_{j, 1}}+A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{r}(\mathrm{~m})-\mathbf{r}\left(p-t_{j}\right) . \tag{4.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that both $G_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$ and $g_{I, k, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right) \operatorname{map} \mathbb{A}_{p-t_{j}} \backslash \beta_{I, k, t_{j}}\left(\left(0, t_{k}\right]\right)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{A}_{\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)}$ and maps $\mathbb{T}$ onto $\mathbb{T}$. So they differ by a multiplicative constant of modulus 1. Thus, there is $C_{k}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \in \mathbb{R}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)=\widetilde{g}_{I, k, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right)+C_{k}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) . \tag{4.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Interchanging $j$ and $k$ in (4.24), we see that there is $C_{j}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \in \mathbb{R}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{G}_{I, j, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right)=\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)+C_{j}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) . \tag{4.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (4.13) we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{k}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right)+C_{j} & =\widetilde{g}_{k, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{I, j}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right),  \tag{4.26}\\
\widetilde{g}_{I, k, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{j}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)+C_{k} & =\widetilde{g}_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{I, k}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right) . \tag{4.27}
\end{align*}
$$

From the definition of inverted annulus Loewner maps, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widetilde{g}_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) & =\widetilde{I}_{\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{I}_{p-t_{k}}, \quad \tilde{g}_{j}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)
\end{aligned}=\widetilde{I}_{p-t_{j}} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I, j}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{I}_{p} ;, \tilde{g}_{I, k, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right)=\widetilde{I}_{\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)} \circ \widetilde{g}_{k, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{I}_{p-t_{j}}, \quad \widetilde{g}_{I, k}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right)=\widetilde{I}_{p-t_{k}} \circ \widetilde{g}_{k}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{I}_{p} .
$$

From (4.27) and the above formulas, we get $\widetilde{g}_{k, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{I, j}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)+C_{k}=$ $\tilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{k}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right)$. Comparing this formula with (4.26), we see that $C_{1}+C_{2} \equiv 0$. Now we define $X_{1}$ and $X_{2}$ on $\mathcal{D}$ by

$$
\begin{align*}
X_{j}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) & =\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)-\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{k}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) \\
& =\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)-\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{k}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) . \tag{4.28}
\end{align*}
$$

From (4.24), (4.25), and $C_{1}+C_{2} \equiv 0$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
X_{1}+X_{2} \equiv 0 \tag{4.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ is even, we may define $Q$ on $\mathcal{D}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q=\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(\mathrm{m}, X_{1}\right)=\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(\mathrm{m}, X_{2}\right) . \tag{4.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Differentiate (4.20) w.r.t. $z$ twice. We get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}^{\prime}\left(t_{j}, z\right)}{\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}^{\prime}\left(t_{j}, z\right)} & =A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{m}, \widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, z\right)-\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)\right) .  \tag{4.31}\\
\partial_{t}\left(\frac{\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}^{\prime \prime}\left(t_{j}, z\right)}{\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}^{\prime}\left(t_{j}, z\right)}\right) & =A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime}\left(\mathrm{m}, \widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, z\right)-\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)\right) \widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}^{\prime}\left(t_{j}, z\right) . \tag{4.32}
\end{align*}
$$

Let $z=\xi_{k}\left(t_{k}\right)$ in (4.20), (4.31), and (4.32). Since $\mathbf{H}_{I}$ and $\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime}$ are odd and $\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}$ is even, from (4.25) and (4.28) we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{j} \widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \xi_{k}\left(t_{k}\right)\right) & =-A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{j}\right)  \tag{4.33}\\
\frac{\partial_{j} A_{k, 1}}{A_{k, 1}} & =A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{m}, X_{j}\right)  \tag{4.34}\\
\partial_{j}\left(\frac{A_{k, 2}}{A_{k, 1}}\right) & =-A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime}\left(\mathrm{m}, X_{j}\right) A_{k, 1} . \tag{4.35}
\end{align*}
$$

Differentiate (4.32) w.r.t. $z$ again, and let $z=\xi_{k}\left(t_{k}\right)$. Since $\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ is even, we get

$$
\partial_{j}\left(\frac{A_{k, 3}}{A_{k, 1}}-\left(\frac{A_{k, 2}}{A_{k, 1}}\right)^{2}\right)=A_{j, 1}^{2}\left[\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(\mathrm{m}, X_{j}\right) A_{k, 1}^{2}-\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime}\left(\mathrm{m}, X_{j}\right) A_{k, 2}\right],
$$

which together with (4.30) and (4.35) implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{j} A_{k, S}=A_{j, 1}^{2} A_{k, 1}^{2} Q \tag{4.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $F$ on $\mathcal{D}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
F\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\exp \left(\int_{0}^{t_{2}} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} A_{1,1}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}\right)^{2} A_{2,1}\left(s_{1}, s_{2}\right)^{2} Q\left(s_{1}, s_{2}\right) d s_{1} d s_{2}\right) \tag{4.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}(0, \cdot)=\widetilde{h}_{I, j, t_{k}}(0, \cdot)=\mathrm{id}$, when $t_{j}=0$, we have $A_{k, 1}=1, A_{k, 2}=$ $A_{k, 3}=0$, hence $A_{k, S}=0$. From (4.36), we see that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial_{j} F}{F}=A_{j, S} \tag{4.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark There is an explanation of $F$ in terms of Brownian loop measure. If $R$ is a function on $(0, \infty)$ that satisfies $R^{\prime}(t)=\mathbf{r}(t)+\frac{1}{t}$, then

$$
-\frac{1}{3} \ln F\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-R\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)+R\left(t_{1}, 0\right)+R\left(0, t_{2}\right)-R(0,0)
$$

is the Brownian loop measure of the loops in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ that intersect both $\beta_{1}\left(\left[0, t_{1}\right]\right)$ and $\beta_{I, 2}\left(\left[0, t_{2}\right]\right)$.

### 4.3 Martingales in two time variables

Let $a_{1}, a_{2} \in \mathbb{T}$ be as in Theorem 4.1. Let $a_{I, j}=I_{p}\left(a_{j}\right) \in \mathbb{T}_{p}, j=1,2$. Choose $x_{1}, x_{2} \in \mathbb{R}$ such that $a_{j}=e^{i x_{j}}, j=1,2$. Let $B_{1}(t)$ and $B_{2}(t)$ be two independent Brownian motions. For $j=1,2$, let $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}^{j}\right)$ be the complete filtration generated by $\left(B_{j}(t)\right)$. Let $\Gamma, \Lambda, \Lambda_{1}$, and $\Lambda_{2}$ be as in Theorem 4.1. Since $\Gamma$ satisfies (4.2), $\Lambda_{j}$, $j=1,2$, has period $2 \pi$, which implies that they are annulus drift functions. For $j=1,2$, let $\xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right), 0 \leq t_{j}<p$, be the solution to the SDE:

$$
\begin{equation*}
d \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)=\sqrt{\kappa} d B_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)+\Lambda_{j}\left(p-t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)-\widetilde{g}_{I, j}\left(t_{j}, x_{3-j}\right)\right) d t_{j}, \quad \xi_{j}(0)=x_{j} \tag{4.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\left(\xi_{1}\right)$ and $\left(\xi_{2}\right)$ are independent. For simplicity, suppose $\kappa \in(0,4]$ (for the case $\kappa>4$, we may work on Loewner chains and apply Proposition 2.1 in [17]). Then for $j=1,2$, a.s. $\left(\xi_{j}\right)$ generates a simple annulus Loewner trace $\beta_{j}$, which is an annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{j}\right)$ trace $\beta_{j}$ in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ started from $a_{j}$ with marked point $a_{I, 3-j}$. We may apply the results in the prior subsection.

As the annulus Loewner objects driven by $\xi_{j}, \beta_{j}, \beta_{I, j}=I_{p} \circ \beta_{j},\left(g_{I, j}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)\right)$, $\left(\widetilde{g}_{j}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)\right)$, and $\left(\widetilde{g}_{I, j}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)\right)$ are all $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j}\right)$-adapted. Fix $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$. Since $\beta_{j}$ is $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j}\right)$-adapted and $\left(g_{I, k}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right)\right)$ is $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{k}}^{k}\right)$-adapted, we see that $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \mapsto \beta_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)=$ $g_{I, k}\left(t_{k}, \beta_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)$ defined on $\mathcal{D}$ is $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{1}}^{1} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}\right)$-adapted. Since $\widetilde{g}_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$ and $\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$ are determined by $\beta_{j, t_{k}}\left(s_{j}\right), 0 \leq s_{j} \leq t_{j}$, they are $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{1}}^{1} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}\right)$-adapted. From (4.13),
$\left(\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)\right)$ is $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{1}}^{1} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}\right)$-adapted. From (4.14), $\left(\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)$ is also $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{1}}^{1} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}\right)$ adapted. From (4.10), (4.28), (4.15), and (4.16), we see that (m), $\left(X_{j}\right),\left(A_{j, h}\right), h=$ $1,2,3$, and $\left(A_{j, S}\right)$ are all $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{1}}^{1} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}\right)$-adapted.

Fix $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$ and any $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}^{k}\right)$-stopping time $t_{k} \in[0, p)$. Let $\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j, t_{k}}=\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{k}}^{k}$, $0 \leq t_{j}<p$. Then $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j, t_{k}}\right)_{0 \leq t_{j}<p}$ is a filtration. Since $\left(B_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)$ is independent of $\mathcal{F}_{t_{k}}^{k}$, it is also an $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j, t_{k}}\right)$-Brownian motion. Thus, (4.39) is an $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j, t_{k}}\right)$-adapted SDE. From now on, we will apply Itô's formula repeatedly, all $\operatorname{SDE}$ will be $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j, t_{k}}\right)$-adapted, and $t_{j}$ ranges in [0, $\left.T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)\right)$.

From (4.22), (4.28), (4.15), and (4.33), we see that $X_{j}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{j} X_{j}=A_{j, 1} \partial \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)+\left(\frac{\kappa}{2}-3\right) A_{j, 2} \partial t_{j}+A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{j}\right) \partial t_{j} . \tag{4.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\Gamma_{1}=\Gamma$ and $\Gamma_{2}(t, x)=\Gamma(t,-x)$. Then for $j=1,2, \Lambda_{j}=\frac{\Gamma_{j}^{\prime}}{\Gamma_{j}}$ and $\Gamma_{j}$ satisfies (4.1). From (4.29), we may define $Y$ on $\mathcal{D}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y=\Gamma_{1}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{1}\right)=\Gamma_{2}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{2}\right) \tag{4.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (4.1), (4.18), (4.40), and (4.41), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial_{j} Y}{Y}= & \frac{1}{\kappa} \Lambda_{j}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{j}\right) A_{j, 1} \partial \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right) \\
& -\left(\frac{3}{\kappa}-\frac{1}{2}\right)\left(A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}\left(\mathrm{m}, X_{j}\right)+\Lambda_{j}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{j}\right) A_{j, 2}\right) \partial t_{j} \tag{4.42}
\end{align*}
$$

From (4.23) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial_{j} A_{j, 1}}{A_{j, 1}}= & \frac{A_{j, 2}}{A_{j, 1}} \cdot \partial \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)+\left(\frac{1}{2} \cdot\left(\frac{A_{j, 2}}{A_{j, 1}}\right)^{2}+\left(\frac{\kappa}{2}-\frac{4}{3}\right) \cdot \frac{A_{j, 3}}{A_{j, 1}}\right) \partial t_{j} \\
& +A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{r}(\mathrm{~m}) \partial t_{j}-\mathbf{r}\left(p-t_{j}\right) \partial t_{j}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let

$$
\alpha=\frac{6-\kappa}{2 \kappa}, \quad c=\frac{(8-3 \kappa)(\kappa-6)}{2 \kappa} .
$$

Actually, $c$ is the central charge for $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$. Then we compute

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial_{j} A_{j, 1}^{\alpha}}{A_{j, 1}^{\alpha}}=\alpha \cdot \frac{A_{j, 2}}{A_{j, 1}} \cdot \partial \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)+\frac{c}{6} A_{j, S} \partial t_{j}+\alpha A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{r}(\mathrm{~m}) \partial t_{j}-\alpha \mathbf{r}\left(p-t_{j}\right) \partial t_{j} . \tag{4.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

Recall the $\mathbf{R}$ defined in Sect. 2.3. Define $\widehat{M}$ on $\mathcal{D}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{M}=A_{1,1}^{\alpha} A_{2,1}^{\alpha} F^{-\frac{c}{6}} Y \exp (\alpha \mathbf{R}(\mathrm{~m})) \tag{4.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\widehat{M}$ is positive. From (2.3), (4.18), (4.34), (4.38), (4.42), and (4.43), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial_{j} \widehat{M}}{\widehat{M}}= & \alpha \frac{A_{j, 2}}{A_{j, 1}} \partial \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)+\frac{A_{j, 1}}{\kappa} \Lambda_{j}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{j}\right) \partial \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right) \\
& -\alpha \mathbf{r}\left(p-t_{j}\right) \partial t_{j}+\alpha A_{j, 1}^{2} \mathbf{r}(\infty) \partial t_{j} \tag{4.45}
\end{align*}
$$

When $t_{k}=0$, we have $A_{j, 1}=1, A_{j, 2}=0, \mathrm{~m}=p-t_{j}$, and $X_{j}=\xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)-\widetilde{g}_{I, j}\left(t_{j}, x_{k}\right)$, so the RHS of (4.45) becomes $\frac{1}{\kappa} \Lambda_{j}\left(p-t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)-\widetilde{g}_{I, j}\left(t_{j}, x_{k}\right)\right) \partial \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)$. Define $M$ on $\mathcal{D}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
M\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\frac{\widehat{M}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \widehat{M}(0,0)}{\widehat{M}\left(t_{1}, 0\right) \widehat{M}\left(0, t_{2}\right)} \tag{4.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $M$ is also positive, and $M(\cdot, 0) \equiv M(0, \cdot) \equiv 1$. From (4.39) and (4.45) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial_{j} M}{M}=\left[\left(3-\frac{\kappa}{2}\right) \frac{A_{j, 2}}{A_{j, 1}}+\Lambda_{j}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{j}\right) A_{j, 1}-\Lambda_{j}\left(p-t_{j}, \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)-\widetilde{g}_{I, j}\left(t_{j}, x_{k}\right)\right)\right] \frac{\partial B_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)}{\sqrt{\kappa}} . \tag{4.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

So when $t_{k} \in[0, p)$ is a fixed $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}^{k}\right)$-stopping time, $M$ is a local martingale in $t_{j}$.
Let $\mathcal{J}$ denote the set of Jordan curves in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ that separate $\mathbb{T}$ and $\mathbb{T}_{p}$. For $J \in \mathcal{J}$ and $j=1,2$, let $T_{j}(J)$ be the first time that $\beta_{j}$ visits $J$. It is also the first time that $\beta_{I, j}$ visits $I_{p}(J)$. Let JP denote the set of pairs $\left(J_{1}, J_{2}\right) \in \mathcal{J}^{2}$ such that $I_{p}\left(J_{1}\right) \cap J_{2}=\emptyset$ and $I_{p}\left(J_{1}\right)$ is surrounded by $J_{2}$. This is equivalent to that $I_{p}\left(J_{2}\right) \cap J_{1}=\emptyset$ and $I_{p}\left(J_{2}\right)$ is surrounded by $J_{1}$. Then for every $\left(J_{1}, J_{2}\right) \in \mathrm{JP}, \beta_{I, 1}\left(\left(0, t_{1}\right]\right) \cap \beta_{2}\left(\left(0, t_{2}\right]\right)=\emptyset$ when $t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$ and $t_{2} \leq T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)$, so $\left[0, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left[0, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right] \subset \mathcal{D}$.

Lemma 4.4 There are positive continuous functions $N_{L}(p)$ and $N_{S}(p)$ defined on $(0, \infty)$ that satisfies $N_{L}(p), N_{S}(p)=O\left(p e^{-p}\right)$ as $p \rightarrow \infty$ and the following properties. Suppose $K$ is an interior hull in $\mathbb{D}$ containing 0 , $g$ maps $\mathbb{D} \backslash K$ conformally onto $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ for some $p \in(0, \infty)$ and maps $\mathbb{T}$ onto $\mathbb{T}$, and $\widetilde{g}$ is an analytic function that satisfies $e^{i} \circ \widetilde{g}=g \circ e^{i}$. Then for any $x \in \mathbb{R},\left|\ln \left(\widetilde{g}^{\prime}(x)\right)\right| \leq N_{L}(p)$ and $|S \widetilde{g}(x)| \leq N_{S}(p)$, where $S \widetilde{g}(x)$ is the Schwarzian derivative of $\widetilde{g}$ at $x$, i.e., $S \widetilde{g}(x)=\widetilde{g}^{\prime \prime \prime}(x) / \widetilde{g}^{\prime}(x)-\frac{3}{2}\left(\widetilde{g}^{\prime \prime}(x) / \widetilde{g}^{\prime}(x)\right)^{2}$.

Proof Let $f=g^{-1}$ and $\widetilde{f}=\widetilde{g}^{-1}$. Then $e^{i} \circ \tilde{f}=f \circ e^{i}$. Since $\widetilde{f}^{\prime}(\underset{g}{\tilde{f}}(x))=1 / \widetilde{g}^{\prime}(x)$ and $S \widetilde{f}(\widetilde{g}(x))=-S \widetilde{g}(x) / \widetilde{g}^{\prime}(x)^{2}$, we suffice to prove the lemma for $\widetilde{f}$. Let $P(p, z)=$ $-\operatorname{Re} \mathbf{S}_{I}(p, z)-\ln |z| / p$ and $\widetilde{P}(p, z)=P\left(p, e^{i z}\right)=\operatorname{Im} \mathbf{H}_{I}(p, z)+\operatorname{Im} z / p$. Then $P(p, \cdot)$ vanishes on $\mathbb{T}$ and $\mathbb{T}_{p} \backslash\left\{e^{-p}\right\}$ and is harmonic inside $\mathbb{A}_{p}$. Moreover, when $z \in \mathbb{A}_{p}$ is near $e^{-p}, P(p, z)$ behaves like $-\operatorname{Re}\left(\frac{e^{-p}+z}{e^{-p}-z}\right)+O(1)$. Thus, $-P(p, \cdot)$ is a renormalized Poisson kernel in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ with the pole at $e^{-p}$. Since $\ln |f|$ is negative and harmonic in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ and vanishes on $\mathbb{T}$, there is a positive measure $\mu_{K}$ on $[0,2 \pi)$ such that

$$
\ln |f(z)|=-\int P\left(p, z / e^{i \xi}\right) d \mu_{K}(\xi), \quad z \in \mathbb{A}_{p}
$$

which implies that

$$
\operatorname{Im} \widetilde{f}(z)=\int P\left(p, e^{i z} / e^{i \xi}\right) d \mu_{K}(\xi)=\int \widetilde{P}(p, z-\xi) d \mu_{K}(\xi), \quad z \in \mathbb{S}_{p}
$$

So for any $x \in \mathbb{R}$ and $h=1,2,3, \widetilde{f}^{(h)}(x)=\int \frac{\partial^{h}}{\partial x^{h-1} \partial y} \widetilde{P}(p, x-\xi) d \mu_{K}(\xi)$. Let

$$
\begin{aligned}
m_{p} & =\inf _{x \in \mathbb{R}} \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \widetilde{P}(p, x), \quad M_{p}=\sup _{x \in \mathbb{R}} \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \widetilde{P}(p, x), \\
M_{p}^{(h)} & =\sup _{x \in \mathbb{R}}\left|\frac{\partial^{h}}{\partial_{x}^{h-1} \partial y} \widetilde{P}(p, x)\right|, \quad h=2,3 .
\end{aligned}
$$

We have $0<m_{p}<M_{p}<\infty$ and $m_{p}\left|\mu_{K}\right| \leq \widetilde{f^{\prime}} \leq M_{p}\left|\mu_{K}\right|$ on $\mathbb{R}$. Since $\tilde{f}(2 \pi)=$ $\widetilde{f}(0)+2 \pi$, we get $1 / M_{p} \leq\left|\mu_{K}\right| \leq 1 / m_{p}$. Thus, $m_{p} / M_{p} \leq \widetilde{f}^{\prime} \leq M_{p} / m_{p}$ and $\left|\widetilde{f}^{(h)}\right| \leq M_{p}^{(h)} / m_{p}, h=2,3$, from which follows that $|S \widetilde{f}| \leq \frac{M_{p}^{(3)} M_{p}}{m_{p}^{2}}+\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{M_{p}^{(2)} M_{p}}{m_{p}^{2}}\right)^{2}$ on $\mathbb{R}$. Since $\widetilde{P}(p, z)=\operatorname{Im} \mathbf{H}_{I}(p, z)+\operatorname{Im} z / p$, we see that $\frac{\partial}{\partial y} \widetilde{P}(p, x)=\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}(p, x)+\frac{1}{p}$ and $\frac{\partial^{h}}{\partial x^{h-1} \partial y} \widetilde{P}(p, x)=\mathbf{H}_{I}^{(h)}(p, x), h=2,3$. From Lemma 2.1, $M_{p}, m_{p}=\frac{1}{p}+$ $O\left(e^{-p}\right)$ and $M_{p}^{(h)}=O\left(e^{-p}\right), h=2,3$, as $p \rightarrow \infty$. So we have $\ln \left(M_{p} / m_{p}\right)=$ $O\left(p e^{-p}\right)$ and $\frac{M_{p}^{(3)} M_{p}}{m_{p}^{2}}+\frac{3}{2}\left(\frac{M_{p}^{(2)} M_{p}}{m_{p}^{2}}\right)^{2}=O\left(p e^{-p}\right)$.

Proposition 4.1 (Boundedness) Fix $\left(J_{1}, J_{2}\right) \in$ JP. Then $|\ln (M)|$ is bounded on $\left[0, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left[0, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right]$ by a constant depending only on $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$.

Proof In this proof, we say a function is uniformly bounded if its values on $\left[0, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left[0, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right]$ are bounded in absolute value by a constant depending only on $p, J_{1}$, and $J_{2}$. If there is no ambiguity, let $\Omega(A, B)$ denote the domain bounded by sets $A$ and $B$, and let $\bmod (A, B)$ denote the modulus of this domain if it is doubly connected. Let $J_{I, 2}=I_{0}\left(J_{2}\right)$. Let $p_{0}=\bmod \left(J_{1}, J_{I, 2}\right)>0$. If $t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$ and $t_{2} \leq T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)$, since $\Omega\left(J_{1}, J_{I, 2}\right)$ disconnects $K_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)$ and $K_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}\right)$ in $\mathbb{A}_{p}, \mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \geq p_{0}$. Since $\mathrm{m} \leq p$ always holds, $\mathrm{m} \in\left[p_{0}, p\right]$ on $\left[0, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left[0, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right]$. Since $\mathbf{R}$ is continuous on $(0, \infty), \mathbf{R}(\mathrm{m})$ is uniformly bounded. Since $Q=\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(\mathrm{m}, X_{1}\right)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ is continuous and has period $2 \pi, Q$ is uniformly bounded. From Lemma 4.4, for $j=1,2,\left|\ln \left(A_{j, 1}\right)\right| \leq N_{L}(\mathrm{~m})$, so it is uniformly bounded. From (4.38), $\ln (F)$ is uniformly bounded. Let $s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$ be as in Theorem 4.1. Let $\Gamma_{s_{0}}>0$ be defined by Lemma 4.3, and $Y_{s_{0}}=\Gamma_{s_{0}}\left(X_{1}\right)$. Then $\Gamma_{s_{0}}$ has period $2 \pi$. So $\ln \left(Y_{s_{0}}\right)$ is uniformly bounded. Define $\widehat{M}_{s_{0}}$ and $M_{s_{0}}$ using (4.44) and (4.46) with $Y$ and $\widehat{M}$ replaced by $Y_{s_{0}}$ and $\widehat{M}_{s_{0}}$, respectively. Then $\ln \left(\widehat{M}_{s_{0}}\right)$ and $\ln \left(M_{s_{0}}\right)$ are uniformly bounded because their factors are. Now it suffices to show that $\ln (M)-\ln \left(M_{s_{0}}\right)$ is uniformly bounded. We have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\ln \left(M\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)\right)-\ln \left(M_{s_{0}}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)\right)= & \frac{s_{0}}{\kappa}\left(X_{1}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-X_{1}\left(t_{1}, 0\right)-X_{1}\left(0, t_{2}\right)+X_{1}(0,0)\right) \\
& +\frac{s_{0}^{2}}{2 \kappa}\left(\mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, 0\right)-\mathrm{m}\left(0, t_{2}\right)+\mathrm{m}(0,0)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

The second term on the RHS of the above formula is uniformly bounded because $\mathrm{m} \in\left[p_{0}, p\right]$. So it suffices to show that $X_{1}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-X_{1}\left(t_{1}, 0\right)-X_{1}\left(0, t_{2}\right)+X_{1}(0,0)$ is uniformly bounded. Let

$$
\widetilde{G}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right), \quad \widetilde{g}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right) .
$$

From (4.28) we have $X_{1}=\widetilde{G}-\widetilde{g}$. So it suffices to show that $\widetilde{G}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-\widetilde{G}\left(t_{1}, 0\right)-$ $\widetilde{G}\left(0, t_{2}\right)+\widetilde{G}(0,0)$ and $\widetilde{g}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-\widetilde{g}\left(t_{1}, 0\right)-\widetilde{g}\left(0, t_{2}\right)+\widetilde{g}(0,0)$ are both uniformly bounded. From (4.20) we have $\partial_{1} \widetilde{g}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=A_{1,1}^{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}\left(\mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right), \widetilde{g}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-\xi_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)$. Since $A_{1,1}^{2}$ is uniformly bounded, $\mathrm{m} \in\left[p_{0}, p\right]$, and $\mathbf{H}_{I}$ is continuous and has period $2 \pi$, $\widetilde{g}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-\widetilde{g}\left(0, t_{2}\right)$ is uniformly bounded. Thus, $\widetilde{g}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-\widetilde{g}\left(t_{1}, 0\right)-\widetilde{g}\left(0, t_{2}\right)+\widetilde{g}(0,0)$ is uniformly bounded. Let $\widetilde{G}_{d}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\widetilde{G}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-\xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)$. Then $\widetilde{G}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-\widetilde{G}\left(t_{1}, 0\right)-$ $\widetilde{G}\left(0, t_{2}\right)+\widetilde{G}(0,0)=\widetilde{G}_{d}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-\widetilde{G}_{d}\left(t_{1}, 0\right)-\widetilde{G}_{d}\left(0, t_{2}\right)+\widetilde{G}_{d}(0,0)$. To finish the proof it suffices to show that $\widetilde{G}_{d}$ is uniformly bounded.

Let $J$ be a Jordan curve which is disjoint from $J_{1}$ and $I_{p}\left(J_{2}\right)$, and separates these two curves. Let $\widetilde{J}=\left(e^{i}\right)^{-1}(J)$. Since $\widetilde{G}_{d}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)-\xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)$, from the Maximum principle, we suffice to show that $\sup _{z \in \widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, \widetilde{J}\right)}\left(\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, z\right)-z\right)$ is uniformly bounded. Recall from (4.13) that $\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{1}}\left(t_{1}, \cdot\right)=\widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, \cdot\right) \circ$ $\widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, \cdot\right)^{-1}$. So we suffice to show that the following three quantities are uniformly bounded:

$$
\sup _{z \in \widetilde{J}}\left|\widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, z\right)-z\right|, \quad \sup _{z \in \widetilde{J}}\left|\widetilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, z\right)-z\right|, \sup _{z \in \widetilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, \widetilde{J}\right)}\left|\widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, z\right)-z\right| .
$$

The uniformly boundedness of these quantities follow from similar arguments. We only work on the last one since it is the hardest. From (4.19) we have

$$
\tilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, z\right)-z=\int_{0}^{t_{1}} A_{1,1}\left(s, t_{2}\right)^{2} \mathbf{H}\left(\mathrm{~m}\left(s, t_{2}\right), \widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}(s, z)-\xi_{1, t_{2}}(s)\right) d s
$$

Since $\int_{0}^{t_{1}} A_{1,1}\left(s, t_{2}\right)^{2} d s=\mathrm{m}\left(0, t_{2}\right)-\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)$ is uniformly bounded, we suffice to show that

$$
\sup _{z \in \tilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, \widetilde{J}\right)}\left|\mathbf{H}\left(\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right), \widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, z\right)-\xi_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)\right|
$$

is uniformly bounded. From the properties of $\mathbf{H}$, we suffice to show that there is a constant $h>0$ such that $\operatorname{Im} \widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \cdot\right) \circ \widetilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, z\right) \geq h$ for any $z \in \widetilde{J}$. This is equivalent to that $\left|g_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \cdot\right) \circ g_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, z\right)\right| \leq e^{-h}$ for any $z \in J$. We suffice to show that the extremal distance (c.f. [26]) between $\mathbb{T}$ and $g_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \cdot\right) \circ g_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, J\right)$ is bounded below by a positive constant depending only on $p, J, J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$. From conformal
invariance, that is equal to the extremal distance between $J$ and $\mathbb{T}_{p} \cup \beta_{I}\left(\left(0, t_{2}\right]\right)$, which is not smaller than the extremal distance between $J$ and $I_{p}\left(J_{2}\right)$ since $I_{p}\left(J_{2}\right)$ separates $J$ from $\mathbb{T}_{p} \cup \beta_{I}\left(\left(0, t_{2}\right]\right)$. So we are done.

### 4.4 Local couplings and global coupling

Let $\mu_{j}$ denote the distribution of $\left(\xi_{j}\right), j=1,2$. Let $\mu=\mu_{1} \times \mu_{2}$. Then $\mu$ is the joint distribution of $\left(\xi_{1}\right)$ and $\left(\xi_{2}\right)$, since $\xi_{1}$ and $\xi_{2}$ are independent. Fix $\left(J_{1}, J_{2}\right) \in J P$. From the local martingale property of $M$ and Proposition 4.1, we have $\mathbf{E}_{\mu}\left[M\left(T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right), T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right)\right]=M(0,0)=1$. Define $\nu_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$ by $d \nu_{J_{1}, J_{2}} / d \mu=$ $M\left(T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right), T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right)$. Then $\nu_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$ is a probability measure. Let $\nu_{1}$ and $\nu_{2}$ be the two marginal measures of $\nu_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$. Then $d \nu_{1} / d \mu_{1}=M\left(T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right), 0\right)=1$ and $d \nu_{2} / d \mu_{2}=$ $M\left(0, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right)=1$, so $v_{j}=\mu_{j}, j=1,2$. Suppose temporarily that the joint distribution of $\left(\xi_{1}\right)$ and $\left(\xi_{2}\right)$ is $\nu_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$ instead of $\mu$. Then the distribution of each $\left(\xi_{j}\right)$ is still $\mu_{j}$.

Fix an $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}^{2}\right)$-stopping time $t_{2} \leq T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)$. From (4.39), (4.47), and Girsanov theorem (c.f. Chapter VIII, Section 1 of [23]), under the probability measure $\nu_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$, there is an $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{1}}^{1} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}\right)_{t_{1} \geq 0}$-Brownian motion $\widetilde{B}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}\right)$ such that $\xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right), 0 \leq t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$, satisfies the $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{1}}^{1} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}\right)_{t_{1} \geq 0}$-adapted SDE:

$$
d \xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)=\sqrt{\kappa} d \widetilde{B}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}\right)+\left(3-\frac{\kappa}{2}\right) \frac{A_{1,2}}{A_{1,1}} d t_{1}+\Lambda_{1}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{1}\right) A_{1,1} d t_{1}
$$

which together with (4.14), (4.22), and Itô's formula implies that

$$
d \xi_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}\right)=A_{1,1} \sqrt{\kappa} d \widetilde{B}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}\right)+A_{1,1}^{2} \Lambda_{1}\left(\mathrm{~m}, \xi_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}\right)-\widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)\right) d t_{1}
$$

Recall that $\zeta_{1, t_{2}}\left(s_{1}\right)=\xi_{1, t_{2}}\left(v_{1, t_{2}}^{-1}\left(s_{1}\right)\right)$ and $\widetilde{h}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(s_{1}, \cdot\right)=\widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(v_{1, t_{2}}^{-1}\left(s_{1}\right), \cdot\right)$. So from (4.11) and (4.17), there is another Brownian motion $\widehat{B}_{1, t_{2}}\left(s_{1}\right)$ such that for $0 \leq s_{1} \leq$ $v_{1, t_{2}}\left(T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right)$,

$$
d \zeta_{1, t_{2}}\left(s_{1}\right)=\sqrt{\kappa} d \widehat{B}_{1, t_{2}}\left(s_{1}\right)+\Lambda_{1}\left(p-t_{2}-s_{1}, \zeta_{1, t_{2}}\left(s_{1}\right)-\widetilde{h}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(s_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)\right) d s_{1}
$$

Moreover, the initial values is $\zeta_{1, t_{2}}(0)=\xi_{1, t_{2}}(0)=\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(0, x_{1}\right)=\widetilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, x_{1}\right)$. Thus, after a time-change, $g_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, \beta_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right), 0 \leq t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$, is a partial annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{1}\right)$ trace in $\mathbb{A}_{p-t_{2}}$ started from $g_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, a_{1}\right)$ with marked point $I_{p-t_{2}} \circ$ $e^{i}\left(\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)$. This means that, conditioning on $\mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}$, after a time-change, $\beta_{1}\left(t_{1}\right), 0 \leq t_{1} \leq$ $T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$, is a partial annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{1}\right)$ trace in $\mathbb{A}_{p} \backslash \beta_{I, 2}\left(\left(0, t_{2}\right]\right)$ started from $a_{1}$ with marked point $\beta_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}\right)$. Similarly, the above statement holds true if the subscripts " 1 " and " 2 " are exchanged.

The joint distribution $v_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$ is a local coupling such that the desired properties in the statement of Theorem 4.1 holds true up to the stopping time $T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$ and $T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)$. Then we can apply the coupling technique developed in Section 7 of [10] to construct a global coupling using the local couplings for different pairs ( $J_{1}, J_{2}$ ).

The coupling technique is composed of several steps. First, let $\left\{\left(J_{1}^{k}, J_{2}^{k}\right): k \in \mathbb{N}\right\}$ denote the set of all pairs in JP such that $J_{j}^{k}, k \in \mathbb{N}, j=1,2$, are polygonal curves, whose vertices have rational coordinates. Second, for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, one may find a coupling of $\beta_{1}$ and $\beta_{2}$ such that, for every $1 \leq k \leq n$, if $\beta_{1}$ is stopped at $\tau_{J_{1}^{k}}$, and $\beta_{2}$ is stopped at $\tau_{J_{2}^{k}}$, then the joint distribution is $v_{J_{1}^{k}, J_{2}^{k}}$. To construct such coupling, we work on the two-dimensional random process $M$. One may prove that there is a process $M_{n}$ defined on $[0, p]^{2}$, which satisfies the following properties:

1. $M_{n}$ is a martingale in one variable, when the other variable is fixed;
2. $M_{n}=1$ when either variable is 0 ;
3. $M_{n}=M$ on $\left[0, \tau_{J_{1}^{k}}\right] \times\left[0, \tau_{J_{2}^{k}}\right], 1 \leq k \leq n$.

To construct $M_{n}$, we use vertical lines $\left\{t_{1}=\tau_{J_{1}^{k}}\right\}$ and horizontal lines $\left\{t_{2}=\tau_{J_{2}^{k}}\right\}$, $1 \leq k \leq n$, to divide the square $[0, p]^{2}$ into smaller rectangles. First define $M_{n}$ on

$$
\bigcup_{k=1}^{n}\left[0, \tau_{J_{1}^{k}}\right] \times\left[0, \tau_{J_{2}^{k}}\right] \cup(\{0\} \times[0, p]) \cup([0, p] \times\{0\})
$$

according to 2 and 3 . Then we extend $M_{n}$ to other smaller rectangles one by one in such a way that in each rectangle $R$ not contained in any $\left[0, \tau_{J_{1}^{k}}\right] \times\left[0, \tau_{J_{2}^{k}}\right], M_{n}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=$ $f_{R}\left(t_{1}\right) g_{R}\left(t_{2}\right)$ for some suitable functions $f_{R}$ and $g_{R}$. Such extension exists, is unique, and satisfies the desired properties. The reader is referred to Theorem 6.1 in [10] for details. The $v_{n}$ is then defined by $d \nu_{n} / d \mu=M_{n}(p, p)$. Finally, the global coupling measure $v$ is any subsequential weal limit of the sequence $\left(v_{n}\right)$ in some suitable topology.

### 4.5 Other results

Here we state without proofs some other results which can be proved using the idea in the proof of Theorem 4.1.
Theorem 4.2 Let $\kappa>0$. Suppose $\Gamma$ is a $C^{1,2}$ differentiable function on $(0, \infty) \times$ $(\mathbb{R} \backslash 2 \pi \mathbb{Z})$ that satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \Gamma=\frac{\kappa}{2} \Gamma^{\prime \prime}+\mathbf{H} \Gamma^{\prime}+\left(\frac{3}{\kappa}-\frac{1}{2}\right) \mathbf{H}^{\prime} \Gamma . \tag{4.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\Lambda=\kappa \frac{\Gamma^{\prime}}{\Gamma}, \Lambda_{1}=\Lambda$, and $\Lambda_{2}$ be the dual of $\Lambda$. Then for any $p>0$ and $a_{1} \neq a_{2} \in \mathbb{T}$, there is a coupling of two curves: $\beta_{1}(t), 0 \leq t<T_{1}$, and $\beta_{2}(t), 0 \leq t<T_{2}$, such that for $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$ the following hold.
(i) $\beta_{j}$ is an annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{j}\right)$ trace in $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ started from $a_{j}$ with marked point $a_{k}$.
(ii) If $t_{k} \in\left[0, T_{k}\right)$ is a stopping time w.r.t. $\left(K_{k}(t)\right)$, then conditioned on $\beta_{k}(t), 0 \leq t \leq$ $t_{k}$, after a time-change, $\beta_{j}(t), 0 \leq t<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, is a partial annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{j}\right)$ process in a component of $\mathbb{A}_{p} \backslash \beta_{k}\left(\left(0, t_{k}\right]\right)$ started from $a_{j}$ with marked point $\beta_{k}\left(t_{k}\right)$, where $T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$ is the first time that $\beta_{j}$ hits $\beta_{k}\left(\left[0, t_{k}\right]\right)$, and is set to be $T_{j}$ if such time does not exist. If $\kappa \in(0,4]$, the word "partial" could be removed.

Remark 1. The $\Lambda$ in the theorem satisfies the following partial differential equation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \Lambda=\frac{\kappa}{2} \Lambda^{\prime \prime}+\left(3-\frac{\kappa}{2}\right) \mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime}+\Lambda \mathbf{H}^{\prime}+\mathbf{H} \Lambda^{\prime}+\Lambda \Lambda^{\prime} . \tag{4.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, if $\Lambda$ satisfies (4.49), then there is $\Gamma$, which satisfies $\Lambda=\kappa \frac{\Gamma^{\prime}}{\Gamma}$ and (4.48).
2. Theorem 4.2 also holds for $\kappa=0$ if $\Lambda$ solves (4.48).

3 . We may also derive similar results for radial $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ process and strip $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ process. In these two cases, $\Gamma$ and $\Lambda$ are functions of a single variable, and $\Lambda=\kappa \frac{\Gamma^{\prime}}{\Gamma}$. If $\Lambda=\frac{\rho}{2} \cot _{2}$ or $\Lambda=\frac{\rho}{2} \operatorname{coth}_{2}$, respectively, in these two cases, then we get the radial $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \rho)$ and strip $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \rho)$ processes, respectively (c.f. [27]). For the radial $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ process, to have the commutation relation, we need that $\Gamma$ solves the ODE

$$
\begin{equation*}
0=\frac{\kappa}{2} \Gamma^{\prime \prime}+\cot _{2} \Gamma^{\prime}+\left(\frac{3}{\kappa}-\frac{1}{2}\right) \cot _{2}^{\prime} \Gamma+C \Gamma, \tag{4.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C$ is a constant. For the strip $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ process, $\Gamma$ must solves (4.50) with $\cot _{2}$ replaced by $\operatorname{coth}_{2}$ to guarantee the existence of the commutation coupling.

## 5 Coupling of whole-plane SLE

The goal of this section is to prove Theorem 5.1 below, which is about commutation couplings of two whole-plane SLE processes. This result will later be used to prove the whole-plane reversibility. Since the proof is similar to the proof of Theorem 4.1, we will frequently quote the arguments in the previous section.
Theorem 5.1 Let $\kappa>0$ and $s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Suppose $\Gamma$ is a positive $C^{1,2}$ differentiable function on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$ that satisfies (4.1) and (4.2). We also call $\Gamma$ a partition function. Let $\Lambda=\kappa \frac{\Gamma^{\prime}}{\Gamma}, \Lambda_{1}=\Lambda$, and $\Lambda_{2}$ be the dual of $\Lambda_{1}$. Let $s_{1}=s_{0}$ and $s_{2}=-s_{0}$. Then there is a coupling of two curves $\beta_{I, 1}(t),-\infty<t<\infty$, and $\beta_{I, 2}(t),-\infty<t<\infty$, such that for $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$, the following hold.
(i) $\beta_{I, j}$ is a whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{j}\right)$ trace in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ from 0 to $\infty$;
(ii) Let $t_{k}$ be a finite stopping time w.r.t. $\left(K_{I, k}(t)\right)$. Then conditioned on $\beta_{I, k}(s),-\infty<$ $s \leq t_{k}$, after a time-change, the curve $\beta_{I, j}\left(t_{j}\right),-\infty<t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, is a disc $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{j}\right)$ process in a component of $\widehat{\mathbb{C}} \backslash I_{0}\left(\beta_{I, j}\left(\left[-\infty, t_{j}\right]\right)\right)$ started from 0 with marked point $I_{0}\left(\beta_{I, j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)$, where $T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$ is the first time that $\beta_{j}$ hits $\beta_{k}\left(\left[-\infty, t_{k}\right]\right)$, or $\infty$ if such time does not exist.

### 5.1 Estimations on Loewner maps

Let $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot), t \in \mathbb{R}$, be the inverted covering whole-plane Loewner maps driven by some $\xi \in C(\mathbb{R})$. Let $z \in \mathbb{C}$ and $h(t)=\operatorname{Im} \widetilde{g}(t, z)>0$ for $t \in\left(-\infty, \tau_{z}\right)$, the interval on which $\widetilde{g}(t, z)$ is defined. From (3.3) we have $-\tanh _{2}(h(t)) \geq h^{\prime}(t) \geq-\operatorname{coth}_{2}(h(t))$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}(t, z)+i\right| \leq \frac{2}{e^{\operatorname{Im} \tilde{g}(t, z)}-1}=\frac{2}{e^{h(t)}-1}, \quad t \in\left(-\infty, \tau_{z}\right) \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

So $h(t)$ decreases, and $\frac{d}{d t} \ln \left(\cosh _{2}(h(t))\right) \geq-1 / 2$, which together with (3.4) and integration implies that $\cosh _{2}(h(t)) \geq \frac{1}{2} e^{\frac{\operatorname{Im} z}{2}-\frac{t}{2}}$. Then we have $e^{h(t)} \geq e^{\operatorname{Im} z-t}-3$. From (5.1) we see that, if $t<\operatorname{Im} z-\ln (8)$, then $\left|\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}(t, z)+i\right| \leq \frac{2}{e^{\operatorname{Im} z-t}-4} \leq 4 e^{t-\operatorname{Im} z}$. From (3.4) and integration we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\widetilde{g}(t, z)+i t-z| \leq 4 e^{t-\operatorname{Im} z} \leq 1 / 2, \quad \text { if } t \leq \operatorname{Im} z-\ln (8) \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\underset{\sim}{\text { If }} \widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ are the covering whole-plane Loewner maps, then from $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)=\widetilde{I}_{0} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ$ $\widetilde{I}_{0}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)-i t-z\right| \leq 4 e^{t+\operatorname{Im} z} \leq 1 / 2, \quad \text { if } t \leq-\operatorname{Im} z-\ln (8) \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<0$, be the covering disc Loewner maps driven by some $\xi \in(-\infty, 0)$. Let $z \in \mathbb{H}$ and $h(t)=\operatorname{Im} \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)>0$ for $t \in\left(-\infty, \tau_{z}\right)$. From Lemma 2.1 and (3.11) we see that if $-t \geq h(t)+2$ then $\left|h^{\prime}(t)\right| \leq 5.5 e^{h(t)+t}$, so $\left|\frac{d}{d t} e^{-h(t)}\right| \leq$ $5.5 e^{t}$. From (3.12) we see that $-t \geq h(t)+2$ when $t$ is close to $-\infty$. Suppose that $-t \geq h(t)+2$ does not hold for all $t \in\left(-\infty, \tau_{z}\right)$, and let $t_{0}$ be the first $t$ such that $-t=h(t)+2$. Then $\left|\frac{d}{d t} e^{-h(t)}\right| \leq 5.5 e^{t}$ on ( $\left.-\infty, t_{0}\right]$. From (3.12) and integration we have $e^{t_{0}+2}=e^{-h\left(t_{0}\right)} \geq e^{-\operatorname{Im} z}-5.5 e^{t_{0}}$, which implies that $e^{-\operatorname{Im} z} \leq\left(e^{2}+5.5\right) e^{t_{0}}<$ $13 e^{t_{0}}$. Thus, if $t \leq-\operatorname{Im} z-\ln (13)$ then $-t \geq h(t)+2$, so $\left|h^{\prime}(t)\right| \leq 5.5 e^{h(t)+t}$. From (3.12) and integration, we see that, if $t \leq-\operatorname{Im} z-\ln (13)$, then $e^{-\operatorname{Im} \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)} \geq$ $\frac{7.5}{13} e^{-\operatorname{Im} z}$, which implies that $\operatorname{Im} \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z) \leq \operatorname{Im} z+\ln (13 / 7.5)<-t-2$, which, together with Lemma 2.1, implies that $\left|\mathbf{H}_{I}\left(-t, \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)-\xi(t)\right)\right| \leq 5.5 \frac{13}{7.5} e^{\operatorname{Im} z+t}<$ $10 e^{\operatorname{Im} z+t}$. From (3.11), (3.12) and integration we have $\left|\widetilde{g}_{I}(t, z)-z\right| \leq 10 e^{\operatorname{Im} z+t}$, if $t \leq-\operatorname{Im} \underset{\sim}{z}-\ln (13)$. If $\widetilde{g} \underset{\sim}{\tau}(, \cdot)$ are the inverted covering disc Loewner maps, then from $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)=\widetilde{I}_{-t} \circ \widetilde{g}_{I}(t, \cdot) \circ \widetilde{I}_{0}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\widetilde{g}(t, z)+i t-z| \leq 10 e^{-\operatorname{Im} z+t} \leq 10 / 13, \quad \text { if } t \leq \operatorname{Im} z-\ln (13) \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 5.2 Ensemble

The argument in this subsection is parallel to that in Sect. 4.2. Let $\xi_{1}, \xi_{2} \in C(\mathbb{R})$. For $j=1,2$, let $g_{I, j}(t, \cdot)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.g_{j}(t, \cdot)\right), t \in \mathbb{R}$, be the whole-plane (resp. inverted wholeplane) Loewner maps driven by $\xi_{j}$. Let $\widetilde{g}_{I, j}(t, \cdot)$ and $\widetilde{g}_{j}(t, \cdot), t \in \mathbb{R}, j=1,2$, be the corresponding covering Loewner maps. Suppose $\xi_{j}$ generates a simple whole-plane Loewner trace: $\beta_{I, j}, j=1,2$. Let $\beta_{I, j}=I_{0} \circ \beta_{j}, j=1,2$, be the inverted trace. Let $K_{j}(t)$ and $K_{I, j}(t)$ be the corresponding hulls. Define $\mathcal{D}$ and m using (4.9) and (4.10) with 0 replaced by $-\infty$ and $\mathbb{A}_{p}$ replaced by $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$. Fix any $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$ and $t_{k} \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$ be as defined as before. Then for any $t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, we have $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \in \mathcal{D}$. Moreover, as $t_{j} \rightarrow T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)^{-}, \mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \rightarrow 0$.

For $-\infty \leq t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, let $\beta_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)=g_{k}\left(t_{k}, \beta_{I, j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)$. Then $\beta_{j, t_{k}}$ is a simple curve in $\mathbb{D}$ starts from 0 . For $-\infty<t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, let $v_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)=-\bmod (\mathbb{D} \backslash$
$\left.\beta_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(\left[-\infty, t_{j}\right]\right)\right)=-\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)$. Then $v_{j, t_{k}}$ is continuous and increasing and maps $\left(-\infty, T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)\right)$ onto $(-\infty, 0)$. Let $\gamma_{I, j, t_{k}}(t)=\beta_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(v_{j, t_{k}}^{-1}(t)\right),-\infty \leq t<0$. Then $\gamma_{I, j, t_{k}}$ is the disc Loewner trace driven by some $\zeta_{j, t_{k}} \in C((-\infty, 0))$. Let $\gamma_{j, t_{k}}$ be the corresponding inverted disc Loewner trace. Let $h_{I, j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$ and $h_{j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$ be the corresponding disc and inverted disc Loewner maps. Let $h_{I, j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$ and $h_{j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$ be the corresponding covering Loewner maps.

For $-\infty<t_{j}<T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)$, let $\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right), \beta_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right), g_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right), g_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right), \widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$, ${\underset{\sim}{n}}^{\text {and }} \tilde{g}_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$ be the time-changes of $\zeta_{j, t_{k}}(t), \gamma_{j, t_{k}}(t), h_{I, j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot), h_{j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$, $\widetilde{h}_{I, j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$, and $\widetilde{h}_{j, t_{k}}(t, \cdot)$, respectively, via $v_{j, t_{k}}$.

Define $G_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$ and $\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$ by (4.12) and (4.13). Then we could choose the driving function $\zeta_{j, t_{k}}$ such that (4.14) holds. Define $A_{j, h}$ and $A_{j, S}$ using (4.15) and (4.16). A standard argument using Lemma 2.1 in [17] shows (4.17) and (4.18) hold here. From the definition of $\widetilde{G}_{I, k, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)$, we get (4.21), which can be differentiated to conclude that (4.22) holds here, and (4.23) holds with $p-t_{j}$ replaced by $\infty$. Let $X_{j}$ be defined by (4.28). Then (4.29) holds. Let $Q$ be defined by (4.30). Then (4.31)-(4.36) still hold.

From Lemma 2.1, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q=O\left(e^{-\mathrm{m}}\right), \quad \text { as } \mathrm{m} \rightarrow \infty \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

From Lemma 4.4, we see that, for $j=1,2$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln \left(A_{j, 1}\right), A_{j, S}=O\left(\mathrm{~m} e^{-\mathrm{m}}\right), \quad \text { as } \mathrm{m} \rightarrow \infty \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $e^{t_{j}}$ is the capacity of $K_{I, j}\left(t_{j}\right)$, which contains 0 , we have $K_{I, j}\left(t_{j}\right) \subset\{|z| \leq$ $\left.4 e^{t_{j}}\right\}$. This then implies that $K_{j}\left(t_{j}\right) \subset\left\{|z| \geq e^{-t_{j}} / 4\right\}, \widetilde{K}_{I, j}\left(t_{j}\right) \subset\left\{\operatorname{Im} z \geq-t_{j}-\right.$ $\ln (4)\}$, and $\widetilde{K}_{j}\left(t_{j}\right) \subset\left\{\operatorname{Im} z \leq \ln (4)+t_{j}\right\}$. Thus,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\{\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \in \mathbb{R}^{2}: t_{1}+t_{2}<-\ln (16)\right\} \subset \mathcal{D}  \tag{5.7}\\
& \mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \geq-t_{1}-t_{2}-\ln (16), \quad \text { if }\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \in \mathcal{D} \tag{5.8}
\end{align*}
$$

From (5.5)-(5.8), we see that $A_{1,1}^{2} A_{2,1}^{2} Q=O\left(e^{t_{1}+t_{2}}\right)$ as $t_{1}+t_{2} \rightarrow-\infty$. Define $F$ on $\mathcal{D}$ using (4.37) with the lower bounds 0 replaced by $-\infty$. From Lemma 4.4, $A_{k, S} \rightarrow 0$ as $t_{j} \rightarrow-\infty$. Thus, (4.38) still holds here, and $\ln \left(F\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)\right)=\int_{-\infty}^{t_{1}} \frac{A_{1, S}\left(s_{1}, t_{2}\right)}{A_{1,1}\left(s_{1}, t_{2}\right)^{2}}$. $A_{1,1}\left(s_{1}, t_{2}\right)^{2} d s_{1}$. Changing variable with $x\left(s_{1}\right)=\mathrm{m}\left(s_{1}, t_{2}\right)$, and using (4.18) and (5.6),we conclude that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln (F)=O\left(\mathrm{~m} e^{-\mathrm{m}}\right), \quad \text { as } \mathrm{m} \rightarrow \infty \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 5.3 Martingales in two time variables

The argument in this subsection is parallel to that in Sect. 4.3. Let $\left(B_{1}^{(\kappa)}(t)\right)$ and $\left(B_{2}^{(\kappa)}(t)\right)$ be two independent pre-( $\left.\mathbb{T} ; \kappa\right)$-Brownian motion. Let $\xi_{j}(t)=B_{j}^{(\kappa)}(t)+s_{j} t$, $t \in \mathbb{R}, j=1$, 2. For simplicity, suppose $\kappa \in(0,4]$. Then for $j=1,2$, a.s. $\left(\xi_{j}\right)$ generates a simple whole-plane Loewner trace $\beta_{I, j}$, which is a whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{0}\right)$
trace in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ from 0 to $\infty$. We may apply the results in the prior subsection. For $j=$ 1,2 , let $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}^{j}\right)_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$ be the complete filtration generated by $e^{i}\left(\xi_{j}\right)$. The whole-plane Loewner objects driven by $\xi_{j}$ are all $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}^{j}\right)$-adapted, because they are all determined by $\left(e^{i}\left(\xi_{j}(t)\right)\right)$. It is easy to check that for $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$, the processes $\left(\beta_{I, j, t_{k}}\right)$, $\left(\widetilde{g}_{I, j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}, \cdot\right)\right),\left(A_{j, h}\right), h=1,2,3,\left(A_{j, S}\right),\left(G_{I, j, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right)\right),\left(\widetilde{G}_{I, j, t_{j}}\left(t_{k}, \cdot\right)\right),\left(e^{i}\left(\xi_{j, t_{k}}\right)\right)$, $\left(e^{i}\left(X_{j}\right)\right),(\mathrm{m}),\left(\mathbf{H}_{I}^{(h)}\left(\mathrm{m}, X_{1}\right)\right),\left(\Gamma_{j}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{j}\right)\right),\left(\Lambda_{j}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{j}\right)\right),(Q)$ and $(F)$ defined on $\mathcal{D}$ are all $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{1}}^{1} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}\right)$-adapted. This is not true for $\left(\xi_{j, t_{k}}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)$ and $\left(X_{j}\right)$, but is true for their images under the map $e^{i}$. Define $Y$ using (4.41). Then $(Y)$ is also $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{1}}^{1} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}\right)$-adapted since $\Gamma_{j}$ has period $2 \pi$.

In this section we work on SDE with the meaning as in Definition 2.2: the stochastic part contains pre- $(\mathbb{T} ; \kappa)$-Brownian motions, and the time intervals start from $-\infty$. The traditional Itô's formula works only for time intervals that start from 0 or a finite number. To derive the results in this section, we may truncate the interval " $(-\infty, T)$ " by an arbitrary real number $c$ (and we work on the interval $[c, T)$ ), which is close to $-\infty$. Fix $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$ and any $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}^{k}\right)$-stopping time $t_{k} \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j, t_{k}}=\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{k}}^{k}$, $t_{j} \in \mathbb{R}$. From now on, all SDE will be $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{j}}^{j, t_{k}}\right)$-adapted (with the meaning as in Definition 2.2), and $t_{j}$ ranges in $\left[0, T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)\right)$.

First, we find that (4.40) still holds here, which then implies (4.42). From the modified (4.23), we see that (4.43) holds here with $p-t_{j}$ replaced by $\infty$. Let $\widehat{M}$ be defined by (4.44). Then (4.45) holds with $p-t_{j}$ replaced by $\infty$.

Define $M$ on $\mathcal{D}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
M=\widehat{M} \exp \left(\alpha \mathbf{r}(\infty)\left(\mathrm{m}+t_{1}+t_{2}\right)+\sum_{j=1,2}-\frac{s_{j}}{\kappa} \xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)+\frac{s_{j}^{2}}{2 \kappa} t_{j}\right) \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $M$ is $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t_{1}}^{1} \times \mathcal{F}_{t_{2}}^{2}\right)$-adapted. From the modified (4.45) and that $\xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)=B_{j}^{(\kappa)}\left(t_{j}\right)+$ $s_{j} t_{j}$, we compute

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial_{j} M}{M}=\left[\left(3-\frac{\kappa}{2}\right) \frac{A_{j, 2}}{A_{j, 1}}+A_{j, 1} \Lambda_{j}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{j}\right)-s_{j}\right] \frac{\partial B_{j}^{(\kappa)}\left(t_{j}\right)}{\kappa} . \tag{5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

So $M$ is a local martingale in $t_{j}$ when $t_{k}$ is a finite stopping time.
Let $\mathcal{J}$ denote the set of Jordan curves in $\mathbb{C} \backslash\{0\}$ that surround 0 . For $J \in \mathcal{J}$ and $j=1,2$, let $T_{j}(J)$ denote the first time that $\beta_{j}$ hits $J$. Then $T_{j}(J)$ is also the first time that $\beta_{I, j}$ hits $I_{0}(J)$. Let $H_{J}$ denote the closure of the domain bounded by $I_{0}(J)$, and let $C_{J}$ denote the capacity of $H_{J}$. If $K_{I, j}(t) \subset H_{J}$, then $e^{t} \leq C_{J}$. So we have $T_{j}(J) \leq \ln \left(C_{J}\right)$.

Let JP denote the set of pairs $\left(J_{1}, J_{2}\right) \in \mathcal{J}^{2}$ such that $I_{0}\left(J_{1}\right) \cap J_{2}=\emptyset$ and $I_{0}\left(J_{1}\right)$ is surrounded by $J_{2}$. This is equivalent to that $I_{0}\left(J_{2}\right) \cap J_{1}=\emptyset$ and $I_{0}\left(J_{2}\right)$ is surrounded by $J_{1}$. Then for every $\left(J_{1}, J_{2}\right) \in \mathrm{JP}, \beta_{I, 1}\left(t_{1}\right) \neq \beta_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)$ when $t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$ and $t_{2} \leq T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)$, so $\left(-\infty, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left(-\infty, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right] \subset \mathcal{D}$.

Proposition 5.1 (Boundedness) Fix $\left(J_{1}, J_{2}\right) \in$ JP. (i) $|\ln (M)|$ is bounded on $\left(-\infty, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left(-\infty, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right]$ by a constant depending only on $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$. (ii) Fix any $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$. Then $\ln (M) \rightarrow 0$ as $t_{j} \rightarrow-\infty$ uniformly in $t_{k} \in\left(-\infty, T_{k}\left(J_{k}\right)\right]$.

Proof Let $\Gamma_{s_{0}}$ be given by Lemma 4.3. Let $\Gamma_{s_{0}, 1}=\Gamma_{s_{0}}$, and $\Gamma_{s_{0}, 2}(t, x)=\Gamma_{s_{0}}(t,-x)$. Define $Y_{s_{0}}$ on $\mathcal{D}$ by $Y_{s_{0}}=\Gamma_{s_{0}, 1}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{1}\right)=\Gamma_{s_{0}, 2}\left(\mathrm{~m}, X_{2}\right)$. Then $Y_{s_{0}}=Y \exp \left(-\frac{s_{0}}{\kappa} X_{1}-\right.$ $\frac{s_{0}^{2} \mathrm{~m}}{2 \kappa}$ ). From Lemma 4.3,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln \left(Y_{s_{0}}\right)=o(\mathrm{~m}) \quad \text { as } \mathrm{m} \rightarrow \infty \tag{5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Define $\widehat{M}_{s_{0}}$ using (4.44) with $Y$ replaced by $Y_{S_{0}}$. From (5.10) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
M=M_{s_{0}} \exp \left(\left(\alpha \mathbf{r}(\infty)+\frac{s_{0}^{2}}{2 \kappa}\right)\left(\mathrm{m}+t_{1}+t_{2}\right)+\frac{s_{0}}{\kappa}\left(X_{1}-\xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)+\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)\right) . \tag{5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (5.6), (5.9), (5.12), and that $\mathbf{R}(p)=O\left(e^{-p}\right)$ as $p \rightarrow \infty$, we see that there is a positive continuous function $f$ on $(0, \infty)$ with $\lim _{x \rightarrow \infty} f(x)=0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\ln \left(M_{s_{0}}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)\right)\right| \leq f\left(\mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)\right) . \tag{5.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\Omega\left(I_{0}\left(J_{1}\right), J_{2}\right)$ denote the doubly connected domain bounded by $I_{0}\left(J_{1}\right)$ and $J_{2}$. Let $p_{0}>0$ denote its modulus. For $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \in\left(-\infty, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left(-\infty, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right]$, since $\Omega\left(I_{0}\left(J_{1}\right), J_{2}\right)$ disconnects $K_{I, 1}\left(t_{1}\right)$ from $K_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)$, we have $\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \geq p_{0}$. On the other hand, $\mathrm{m} \leq p$. From (5.14) we see that $\ln \left(M_{s_{0}}\right)$ is uniformly bounded. From (5.7), (5.8), (5.14), and that $T_{k}\left(J_{k}\right) \leq C_{J_{k}}<\infty$, we see that $\ln (M) \rightarrow 0$ as $t_{j} \rightarrow-\infty$ uniformly in $t_{k} \in\left(-\infty, T_{k}\left(J_{k}\right)\right]$. The rest of the proof follows from (5.13) and the following proposition.

Proposition 5.2 Fix $\left(J_{1}, J_{2}\right) \in$ JP. (i) $\left|X_{1}-\xi_{1}+\xi_{2}\right|$ and $\left|\mathrm{m}+t_{1}+t_{2}\right|$ are bounded on $\left(-\infty, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left(-\infty, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right]$ by constants depending only on $J_{1}$ and $J_{2}$. (ii) For any $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}, X_{1}-\xi_{1}+\xi_{2} \rightarrow 0$ and $\mathrm{m}+t_{1}+t_{2} \rightarrow 0$ as $t_{j} \rightarrow-\infty$, uniformly in $t_{k} \in\left(-\infty, T_{k}\left(J_{k}\right)\right]$.

Proof Recall that $T_{j}\left(J_{j}\right) \leq C_{J_{j}}<\infty$ for $j=1,2$, and $\mathrm{m} \geq p_{0}>0$ on $\left(-\infty, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left(-\infty, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right]$. If there is no ambiguity, let $\Omega(A, B)$ denote the domain bounded by sets $A$ and $B$, and let $\bmod (A, B)$ denote the modulus of this domain if it is doubly connected.

From (4.28) we have $X_{1}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)-\widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)$. So

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|X_{1}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)-\xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)+\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right| \leq & \left|\widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)-\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right| \\
& +\left|\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)-\xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right| . \tag{5.15}
\end{align*}
$$

From (3.12) we have $\lim _{t_{1} \rightarrow-\infty} \widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)=\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)$. From (4.18), (4.20), and Lemma 2.1, we see that there is a deterministic positive decreasing function $f(x)$ with $\lim _{x \rightarrow \infty} f(x)=0$ such that $\left|\widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)-\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right| \leq f\left(\mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)\right)$. Since $\mathrm{m} \geq p_{0}$ on $\left(-\infty, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left(-\infty, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right],\left|\widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)-\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right|$ is uniformly bounded by $f\left(p_{0}\right)$. From (5.8) and that $T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right) \leq C_{J_{2}}$, we see that $\widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)-\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right) \rightarrow 0$ as $t_{1} \rightarrow-\infty$, uniformly in $t_{2} \in\left(-\infty, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right]$.

Let $J$ be a Jordan curve separating $J_{1}$ and $J_{I, 2}$. Let $p_{1}=\bmod \left(J, J_{1}\right)$ and $p_{2}=$ $\bmod \left(J, J_{I, 2}\right)$. Let $\widetilde{J}=\left(e^{i}\right)^{-1}(J)$. Let $h_{m}=\inf \{\operatorname{Im} z: z \in \widetilde{J}\}$ and $h_{M}=\sup \{\operatorname{Im} z$ : $z \in \widetilde{J}\}$. Then both $h_{m}$ and $h_{M}$ are finite. For $j=1,2$, there is $h_{j}>0$ depending only on $p_{j}$, such that, if $K \subset \mathbb{D}$ is an interior hull with $0 \in K$ and $\bmod (\mathbb{D} \backslash K) \geq$ $p_{j}$, then $K \subset\left\{|z| \leq e^{-h_{j}}\right\}$. If $t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$, then $J_{1}$ disconnects $J$ from $K_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)$, so $\bmod \left(J, K_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right) \geq p_{1}$. Since $\Omega\left(J, K_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)$ is mapped by $g_{1}\left(t_{1}, \cdot\right)$ conformally onto $\Omega\left(g_{1}\left(t_{1}, J\right), \mathbb{T}\right) \subset \mathbb{D}, \bmod \left(g_{1}\left(t_{1}, J\right), \mathbb{T}\right) \geq p_{1}$. Since $g_{1}\left(t_{1}, J\right)$ surrounds 0 , $g_{1}\left(t_{1}, J\right) \subset\left\{|z| \leq e^{-h_{1}}\right\}$. Since $\widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, \widetilde{J}\right)=\left(e^{i}\right)^{-1}\left(g_{1}\left(t_{1}, J\right)\right), \widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, \widetilde{J}\right) \subset\{\operatorname{Im} z \geq$ $\left.h_{1}\right\}$. Similarly, if $t_{2} \leq T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)$, then $\widetilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, \widetilde{J}\right) \subset\left\{\operatorname{Im} z \leq-h_{2}\right\}$. If $t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$ and $t_{2} \leq T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)$, then $g_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \cdot\right) \circ g_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, \cdot\right)$ maps $\mathbb{C} \backslash K_{1}\left(t_{1}\right) \backslash K_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}\right)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{A}_{\mathrm{m}}$. A similar argument shows that the image of $J$ under this map lies in $\left\{e^{-\mathrm{m}+h_{2}} \leq\right.$ $\left.|z| \leq e^{-h_{1}}\right\}$. Thus, $\widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \widetilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, \widetilde{J}\right)\right) \subset\left\{h_{1} \leq \operatorname{Im} z \leq \mathrm{m}-h_{2}\right\}$, if $t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$ and $t_{2} \leq T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)$.

Let $z_{0} \in \mathbb{C} \backslash \widetilde{K}_{1}\left(t_{1}\right) \backslash \widetilde{K}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}\right), w_{1}=\widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, z_{0}\right), w_{2}=\widetilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}, z_{0}\right)$, and $w_{3}=$ $\tilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, w_{2}\right)$. From (5.2), (5.3), and (5.4) we see that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|w_{1}-\left(z_{0}-i t_{1}\right)\right| \leq 4 e^{t_{1}-\operatorname{Im} z_{0}} \leq 1 / 2, \quad \text { if } t_{1} \leq \operatorname{Im} z_{0}-\ln (8)  \tag{5.16}\\
& \left|w_{2}-\left(z_{0}+i t_{2}\right)\right| \leq 4 e^{t_{2}+\operatorname{Im} z_{0}} \leq 1 / 2, \quad \text { if } t_{2} \leq-\operatorname{Im} z_{0}-\ln (8)  \tag{5.17}\\
& \left|w_{3}-\left(w_{2}+i \mathrm{~m}\right)\right| \leq 10 e^{-\mathrm{m}-\operatorname{Im} w_{2}}<1, \quad \text { if } \operatorname{Im} w_{2}+\mathrm{m} \geq \ln (13) . \tag{5.18}
\end{align*}
$$

Now let $z_{0} \in \widetilde{J}$. From the prior paragraph, $\operatorname{Im} \widetilde{g}_{1}\left(s, z_{0}\right) \geq h_{1}$ for $s \leq t_{1}$, $\operatorname{Im} \widetilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(s, z_{0}\right) \leq-h_{2}$ for $s \leq t_{2}$, and $\mathrm{m}\left(s, t_{2}\right)-h_{2} \geq \widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(s, w_{2}\right) \geq h_{1}$ for $s \leq t_{1}$. From (5.1) we have $\left|\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}_{1}\left(s, z_{0}\right)+i\right| \leq \frac{2}{e^{h_{1}-1}}$, for $s \leq t_{1}$. Similarly, $\left|\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}_{I, 2}\left(s, z_{0}\right)-i\right| \leq \frac{2}{e^{h_{2}-1}}$ for $s \leq t_{2}$. If $t_{1} \leq \operatorname{Im} z_{0}-\ln (8)$, then from (5.16), $\left|w_{1}-\left(z_{0}-i t_{1}\right)\right| \leq 1 / 2$. If $t_{1}>\operatorname{Im} z_{0}-\ln (8)$, we let $t_{1}^{\prime}=\operatorname{Im} z_{0}-\ln (8)$, and $w_{1}^{\prime}=\widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}^{\prime}, z_{0}\right)$. Then we have $\left|w_{1}^{\prime}-\left(z_{0}-i t_{1}^{\prime}\right)\right| \leq 1 / 2$. From the bound of $\left|\partial_{t} \widetilde{g}_{1}\left(s, z_{0}\right)+i\right|$, we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\left(w_{1}+i t_{1}\right)-\left(w_{1}^{\prime}+i t_{1}^{\prime}\right)\right| & \leq \frac{2\left(t_{1}-t_{1}^{\prime}\right)}{e^{h_{1}}-1} \leq \frac{2 C_{J_{1}}-2\left(\operatorname{Im} z_{0}-\ln (8)\right)}{e^{h_{1}}-1} \\
& \leq \frac{2 C_{J_{1}}+2 \ln (8)-2 h_{m}}{e^{h_{1}}-1}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $A_{1}=\frac{1}{2}+\max \left\{0, \frac{2 C_{J_{1}}+2 \ln (8)-2 h_{m}}{e^{h_{1}}-1}\right\}$. Then in all cases we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|w_{1}-\left(z_{0}-i t_{1}\right)\right| \leq A_{1} . \tag{5.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, let $A_{2}=\frac{1}{2}+\max \left\{0, \frac{2 C_{J_{2}}+2 \ln (8)+2 h_{M}}{e^{h_{2}-1}}\right\}$. Then we always have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|w_{2}-\left(z_{0}+i t_{2}\right)\right| \leq A_{2} \tag{5.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\operatorname{Im} z_{0} \geq h_{m}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{2}-\operatorname{Im} w_{2} \leq A_{2}-\operatorname{Im} z_{0} \leq A_{2}-h_{m} \tag{5.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $\operatorname{Im} w_{2}+\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) \geq \ln (13)$, from (5.18), we have $\left|w_{3}-\left(w_{2}+i \mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)\right)\right|<1$. Now suppose that $\operatorname{Im} w_{2}+\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)<\ln (13)$. We may choose $t_{1}^{\prime}<t_{1}$ such that $\operatorname{Im} w_{2}+\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}^{\prime}, t_{2}\right)=\ln (13)$. Let $w_{3}^{\prime}=\tilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}^{\prime}, w_{2}\right)$. Then we have $\mid w_{3}^{\prime}-\left(w_{2}+\right.$ $\left.i \mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}^{\prime}, t_{2}\right)\right) \mid<1$. For $s \leq t_{1}$, since $h_{1} \leq \operatorname{Im} \widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(s, w_{2}\right) \leq \mathrm{m}\left(s, t_{2}\right)-h_{2}$, from Lemma 2.1 we have

$$
\left|\mathbf{H}_{I}\left(\mathrm{~m}\left(s, t_{2}\right), i \mathrm{~m}\left(s, t_{2}\right)-\widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(s, w_{2}\right)+\xi_{1, t_{2}}(s)\right)\right| \leq \frac{4 e^{-h_{1}}}{\left(1-e^{-h_{1}}\right)^{3}} .
$$

Since $\mathbf{H}_{I}(\mathrm{~m}, z)+i=\mathbf{H}_{I}(\mathrm{~m}, z-i \mathrm{~m})=-\mathbf{H}_{I}(\mathrm{~m}, i \mathrm{~m}-z)$, we have

$$
\left|\mathbf{H}\left(\mathrm{m}\left(s, t_{2}\right), \widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(s, w_{2}\right)-\xi_{1, t_{2}}(s)\right)+i\right| \leq \frac{4 e^{-h_{1}}}{\left(1-e^{-h_{1}}\right)^{3}}, \quad \text { if } s \leq t_{1}
$$

Let $C_{0}=\frac{4 e^{-h_{1}}}{\left(1-e^{-h_{1}}\right)^{3}}$. From (4.18), (4.20), (5.8), (5.21), and the above inequality, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\left(w_{3}-i \mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)\right)-\left(w_{3}^{\prime}-i \mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}^{\prime}, t_{2}\right)\right)\right| & \leq C_{0}\left(\mathrm{~m}\left(t_{1}^{\prime}, t_{2}\right)-\mathrm{m}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)\right) \\
& \leq C_{0}\left(\ln (13)-\operatorname{Im} w_{2}+t_{1}+t_{2}+\ln (16)\right) \\
& \leq C_{0}\left(\ln (13)+\ln (16)+C_{J_{1}}+A_{2}-h_{m}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $A_{3}=1+\max \left\{0, C_{0}\left(\ln (13)+\ln (16)+C_{J_{1}}+A_{2}-h_{m}\right)\right\}$. Then $\mid w_{3}-\left(w_{2}+\right.$ $i \mathrm{~m}) \mid \leq A_{3}$ always holds, which together with (5.19) and (5.20) implies that, for any $t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$ and $t_{2} \leq T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, w_{1}\right)-w_{1}-i\left(\mathrm{~m}+t_{1}+t_{2}\right)\right| \leq A_{1}+A_{2}+A_{3}, \quad w_{1} \in \widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, \widetilde{J}\right) \tag{5.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now $\widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, \widetilde{J}\right)$ is a curve with period $2 \pi$ above $\mathbb{R}$, the function $w \mapsto \widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, w\right)-w$ has period $2 \pi$, is analytic in $\Omega\left(\widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, \widetilde{J}\right), \mathbb{R}\right)$, and its imaginary part vanishes on $\mathbb{R}$. Applying the maximum principle to the real part of this function, and using (5.22), we conclude that

$$
\left|\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)-\xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right| \leq A_{1}+A_{2}+A_{3}, \quad \text { if } t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right) \text { and } t_{2} \leq T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)
$$

This together with (5.15) and the estimation of $\left|\widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)-\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right|$ implies that $\left|X_{1}-\xi_{1}+\xi_{2}\right|$ is uniformly bounded on $\left(-\infty, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right] \times\left(-\infty, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right]$.

Since $G_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \cdot\right)$ maps $\mathbb{T}$ onto $\mathbb{T}$, and is conformal in the domain that contains the region between $g_{1}\left(t_{1}, J\right)$ and $\mathbb{T}$, there must exist $z_{1} \in g_{1}\left(t_{1}, J\right)$ such that $\left|G_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, z_{1}\right)\right|=\left|z_{1}\right|$. Choose $w_{1} \in \widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, \widetilde{J}\right)$ such that $e^{i}\left(w_{1}\right)=z_{1}$. Then $\operatorname{Im} \widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, w_{1}\right)=\operatorname{Im} w_{1}$. From (5.22) we get $\left|\mathrm{m}+t_{1}+t_{2}\right| \leq A_{1}+A_{2}+A_{3}$, if $t_{1} \leq T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)$ and $t_{2} \leq T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)$, which finishes the proof of (i).

Now suppose $t_{1}+t_{2} \leq-1-2 \ln (13)-2 \ln (16)$ and $\operatorname{Im} z_{0}=\frac{t_{1}-t_{2}}{2}$. Then

$$
\operatorname{Im} z_{0}-t_{1}=-\operatorname{Im} z_{0}-t_{2}=-\frac{t_{1}+t_{2}}{2} \geq \frac{1}{2}+\ln (13)+\ln (16) \geq \ln (8)
$$

Since $\widetilde{K}_{1}\left(t_{1}\right) \subset\left\{\operatorname{Im} z \leq \ln (4)+\ln \left(t_{1}\right)\right\}$ and $\widetilde{K}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}\right) \subset\left\{\operatorname{Im} z \geq-\ln \left(t_{2}\right)-\ln (4)\right\}$, we have $z_{0} \in \mathbb{C} \backslash \widetilde{K}_{1}\left(t_{1}\right) \backslash \widetilde{K}_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}\right)$. From (5.16) and (5.17) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|w_{1}-\left(z_{0}-i t_{1}\right)\right|,\left|w_{2}-\left(z_{0}+i t_{2}\right)\right| \leq 4 e^{\frac{t_{1}+t_{2}}{2}} \leq 1 / 2 \tag{5.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (5.8), (5.23), and the upper bound of $t_{1}+t_{2}$, we have
$\operatorname{Im} w_{2}+\mathrm{m} \geq \operatorname{Im} z_{0}+t_{2}-\frac{1}{2}-t_{1}-t_{2}-\ln (16)=-\frac{t_{1}+t_{2}+1}{2}-\ln (16) \geq \ln (13)$.
Thus, from (5.18) and the above inequality we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\widetilde{g}_{1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, w_{2}\right)-\left(w_{2}+i \mathrm{~m}\right)\right| \leq 10 e^{-\mathrm{m}-\operatorname{Im} w_{2}} \leq 264 e^{\frac{t_{1}+t_{2}}{2}} \tag{5.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (4.13), (5.23), and (5.24) we see that if $t_{1}+t_{2} \leq-1-2 \ln (13)-2 \ln (16)$, then

$$
\left|\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, w_{1}\right)-w_{1}-i\left(\mathrm{~m}+t_{1}+t_{2}\right)\right| \leq 272 e^{\frac{t_{1}+t_{2}}{2}}, \quad w_{1} \in \widetilde{g}_{1}\left(t_{1}, \mathbb{R}_{\left(t_{1}-t_{2}\right) / 2}\right)
$$

The argument between (5.22) and the end of part (i) can be used here to show that, if $t_{1}+t_{2} \leq-1-2 \ln (13)-2 \ln (16)$, then $\left|\widetilde{G}_{I, 2, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)-\xi_{1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right| \leq 272 e^{\frac{t_{1}+t_{2}}{2}}$ and $\left|\mathrm{m}+t_{1}+t_{2}\right| \leq 272 e^{\frac{t_{1}+t_{2}}{2}}$. These inequalities together with the uniform limit of $\widetilde{g}_{I, 1, t_{2}}\left(t_{1}, \xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)-\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)$ and the fact that $T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right) \leq C_{J_{2}}$ imply that (ii) hold for $j=1$ and $k=2$. Interchanging $t_{1}$ and $t_{2}$, we find that $\mathrm{m}+t_{1}+t_{2} \rightarrow 0$ and $X_{2}-\xi_{2}+\xi_{1} \rightarrow 0$ as $t_{2} \rightarrow 0$, uniformly in $t_{1} \in\left(-\infty, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right]$. From (4.29) we see that $X_{2}-\xi_{2}+\xi_{1}=-\left(X_{1}-\xi_{1}+\xi_{2}\right)$, so we have $X_{1}-\xi_{1}+\xi_{2} \rightarrow 0$ as $t_{2} \rightarrow 0$, uniformly in $t_{1} \in\left(-\infty, T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right)\right]$. This completes the proof of part (ii).

Let $\widehat{\mathcal{D}}=\mathcal{D} \cup\left\{\left(t_{1},-\infty\right): t_{1} \in[-\infty, \infty)\right\} \cup\left\{\left(-\infty, t_{2}\right): t_{2} \in[-\infty, \infty)\right\}$, and extend $M$ to $\widehat{\mathcal{D}}$ such that $M=1$ if $t_{1}$ or $t_{2}$ equals $-\infty$. From Proposition 5.1, we see that $M$ is positive and continuous on $\widehat{\mathcal{D}}$. So for any fixed $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$ and any $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}^{k}\right)$-stopping time $t_{k}$ which is uniformly bounded above, $M$ is a local martingale in $t_{j} \in\left[-\infty, T_{j}\left(t_{k}\right)\right)$.

### 5.4 Local coupling and global coupling

Let $\mu_{j}$ denote the distribution of $\left(\xi_{j}\right), j=1,2$. Let $\mu=\mu_{1} \times \mu_{2}$. Then $\mu$ is the joint distribution of $\left(\xi_{1}\right)$ and $\left(\xi_{2}\right)$, since $\xi_{1}$ and $\xi_{2}$ are independent. Fix $\left(J_{1}, J_{2}\right) \in J P$. From the local martingale property of $M$ and Proposition 5.1, we have $\mathbf{E}_{\mu}\left[M\left(T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right), T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right)\right]=M(-\infty,-\infty)=1$. Define $v_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$ by $d \nu_{J_{1}, J_{2}}=$ $M\left(T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right), T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right) d \mu$. Then $v_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$ is a probability measure. Let $\nu_{1}$ and $\nu_{2}$ be the two marginal measures of $\nu_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$. Then $d \nu_{1} / d \mu_{1}=M\left(T_{1}\left(J_{1}\right),-\infty\right)=1$ and $d \nu_{2} / d \mu_{2}=$ $M\left(-\infty, T_{2}\left(J_{2}\right)\right)=1$, so $v_{j}=\mu_{j}, j=1,2$. Suppose temporarily that the distribution of $\left(\xi_{1}, \xi_{2}\right)$ is $\nu_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$ instead of $\mu$. Then the distribution of each $\left(\xi_{j}\right)$ is still $\mu_{j}$.

We may now use the argument in Sect. 4.4 with a few changes. Here $M\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)$ satisfies (5.11) instead of (4.47); $\xi_{j}\left(t_{j}\right)$ does not satisfy (4.39), but is a pre-( $\left.\mathbb{T} ; \kappa\right)$ Brownian motion with drift $s_{j} \cdot t$. The traditional Girsanov theorem needs to be modified to work for the current setting. Eventually, we can conclude that, under the probability measure $v_{J_{1}, J_{2}}$, for any $j \neq k \in\{1,2\}$, if $t_{k}$ is a fixed $\left(\mathcal{F}_{t}^{k}\right)$-stopping time with $t_{k} \leq T_{k}\left(J_{k}\right)$, and $g_{k}(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<\infty$, are the inverted whole-plane Loewner maps driven by $\xi_{k}$, then conditioned on $\mathcal{F}_{t_{k}}^{k}$, after a time-change, $g_{k}\left(t_{k}, K_{I, j}\left(t_{j}\right)\right)$, $-\infty<t_{j} \leq T_{j}\left(J_{j}\right)$, is a partial disc $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{j}\right)$ process in $\mathbb{D}$ started from 0 with marked point $e^{i}\left(\xi_{k}\left(t_{k}\right)\right)$.

The proof of Theorem 5.1 can be now completed by applying the coupling technique.

## 6 Partial differential equations

With Theorem 5.1 at hand, to prove the main theorem we need to find particular solutions to (4.1) that satisfy certain properties. This section serves this purpose. From Lemma 4.1 we see that solving (4.1) is equivalent to solving (4.5) with $\sigma=\frac{4}{\kappa}-1$. Throughout this section, we assume that $\kappa>0$ and $\sigma \in\left[0, \frac{4}{\kappa}\right)$, and will find solutions to (4.5) in these cases. In particular, we will obtain solutions to (4.1) when $\kappa \in(0,4]$.

The solutions to (4.5) is obtained by construction. We will transform (4.5) into a similar $\operatorname{PDE}$ (6.26), where $\mathbf{H}_{I}$ is replaced by $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}$. We know that as $t \rightarrow \infty, \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, \cdot) \rightarrow$ coth $_{2}$, and PDE (6.26) tends to another PDE (6.27), which has a simple solution $\widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}$ given by (6.28). Then we let $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}=\widehat{\Psi} / \widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}$, and find that $\widehat{\Psi}$ solves (6.26) if and only if $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ solves PDE (6.29). A formal solution to (6.29) is expressed by a FeynmanKac formula (6.30), which involves diffusion processes. Such diffusion processes are introduced and studied in Sect. 6.1. In Sect. 6.2 we describe how close is $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, \cdot)$ to coth $_{2}$ when $t$ is big. In Sect. 6.3 we transform the PDE (4.5) for $\Psi$ into the PDE (6.29) for $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$, and give an intuitive reason why the formula (6.30) gives a solution to (6.29). In Sect. 6.4 we prove that the $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ given by (6.30) is smooth, and solves (6.29). So we obtain a solution $\Gamma$ to (4.1). However, such $\Gamma$ does not satisfy (4.2). For this purpose, note that (4.1) is a linear PDE, and $\mathbf{H}_{I}$ has period $2 \pi$, so any translation of $\Gamma$ by an integer multiple of $2 \pi$ also solves (4.1). The solutions to (4.1) which also satisfy (4.2) will be obtained by summing over all translations of $\Gamma$ with suitable weights.

The following symbols will be used in this section. For any $n, j \in \mathbb{N}$, we call an $j$ tuple $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{j}\right) \in \mathbb{N}^{j}$ a partition of $n$ if $\lambda_{1} \geq \cdots \geq \lambda_{j}$ and $\sum_{k=1}^{j} \lambda_{k}=n$. The length of such partition is denoted by $l(\lambda)=j$. Let $\mathcal{P}_{n}$ denote the set of all partitions of $n$. For example, ( $n$ ) is the only element in $\mathcal{P}_{n}$ with length 1 . Let $\mathcal{P}_{\mathbb{N}}=\bigcup_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \mathcal{P}_{n}$ denote the set of all partitions.

### 6.1 Diffusion processes

Fix $\tau \leq 0$. For $x \in \mathbb{R}$, let $u(t, x), t \geq 0$, be the solution to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} u(t, x)=\tau \tanh _{2}(u(t, x)+\sqrt{\kappa} B(t)) ; \quad u(0, x)=x . \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $X_{x}(t):=u(t, x)+\sqrt{\kappa} B(t)$ satisfies the SDE

$$
\begin{equation*}
d X_{x}(t)=\sqrt{\kappa} d B(t)+\tau \tanh _{2}\left(X_{x}(t)\right) d t, \quad X_{x}(0)=x . \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 6.1 For any $x \in \mathbb{R}$, we have a.s. $\int_{0}^{\infty} \tanh _{2}^{\prime}\left(X_{x}(t)\right) d t=\infty$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\limsup _{t \rightarrow \infty} X_{x}(t)=+\infty, \quad \liminf _{t \rightarrow \infty} X_{x}(t)=-\infty \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof Fix $x \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $X(t)=X_{x}(t)$. Define $f(t)=\int_{0}^{t} \cosh _{2}(s)^{-\frac{4}{\kappa} \tau} d s, \quad t \in \mathbb{R}$. Then $f$ is a differentiable increasing odd function and satisfies $\frac{\kappa}{2} f^{\prime \prime}+\tau \tanh _{2} f^{\prime}=0$. Let $Y(t)=f(X(t))$. From (6.2) and Itô's formula, we have $d Y(t)=f^{\prime}(X(t)) \sqrt{\kappa} d B(t)$. Define a time-change function $u(t)=\int_{0}^{t} \kappa f^{\prime}(X(s))^{2} d s$. Since $\tau \leq 0, f^{\prime}(t) \geq 1$, $t \in \mathbb{R}$. Thus, $u(t) \geq t$ for all $t \in \mathbb{R}$. So $u$ maps $[0, \infty)$ onto $[0, \infty)$, and $Y\left(u^{-1}(t)\right)$, $0 \leq t<\infty$, has the distribution of a Brownian motion. Thus, (6.3) holds with $X$ replaced by $Y$, which then implies (6.3). Since $X$ is recurrent, and $\tanh _{2}^{\prime}>0$ on $\mathbb{R}$, we immediately have a.s. $\int_{0}^{\infty} \tanh _{2}^{\prime}\left(X_{x}(t)\right) d t=\infty$.

Lemma 6.2 For any $b, c>0$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{P}\left[\exists t \geq 0,\left|X_{x}(t)\right|>c t+b\right] \leq 2 e^{\frac{2 c}{\kappa}(|x|-b)} \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof First, it is well known that (6.4) holds with $X_{x}(t)$ replaced by $x+\sqrt{\kappa} B(t)$. So it suffices to show that $\left(\left|X_{x}(t)\right|\right)$ is bounded above by a process that has the distribution of $(|x+\sqrt{\kappa} B(t)|)$. This can be proved by using Theorem 4.1 in [28]. Here we give a direct proof.

Let $Y(t)=\left|X_{x}(t)\right|$ From (6.2) and Tanaka-Itô's formula, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y(t)=|x|+\sqrt{\kappa} B_{0}(t)+\frac{\kappa}{2} \tau \int_{0}^{t} \tanh _{2}(Y(s)) d s+L(t), \quad t \geq 0 \tag{6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B_{0}(t)$ is a Brownian motion, $L(t)$ is a non-decreasing function, which satisfies $L(0)=0$ and is constant on every interval of $\{Y(t)>0\}$.

Fix $t_{0} \geq 0$. There is $t_{0}^{\prime} \in\left[0, t_{0}\right]$ such that $L(t)$ is constant on $\left[t_{0}^{\prime}, t_{0}\right]$. We may assume $t_{0}^{\prime}$ is the smallest such number. There are two cases. Case $1: t_{0}^{\prime}=0$. Then $L\left(t_{0}\right)=L\left(t_{0}^{\prime}\right)=L(0)=0$. Since $\tau \leq 0$, from (6.5), $Y\left(t_{0}\right) \leq|x|+\sqrt{\kappa} B_{0}(t)$. Case 2: $t_{0}^{\prime}>0$. Then $Y\left(t_{0}^{\prime}\right)=0$. Since $\tau \leq 0$, from (6.5),

$$
Y\left(t_{0}\right)-|x|-\sqrt{\kappa} B_{0}\left(t_{0}\right) \leq Y\left(t_{0}^{\prime}\right)-|x|-\sqrt{\kappa} B_{0}\left(t_{0}^{\prime}\right)=-|x|-\sqrt{\kappa} B_{0}\left(t_{0}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

Thus, in either case, we have

$$
Y\left(t_{0}\right) \leq|x|+\sqrt{\kappa} B_{0}\left(t_{0}\right)+\max \left\{0, \sup _{0 \leq s \leq t_{0}}\left\{-|x|-\sqrt{\kappa} B_{0}(s)\right\}\right\}
$$

The RHS of the above inequality defines a process that has the distribution of $\mid x+$ $\sqrt{\kappa} B\left(t_{0}\right) \mid, t_{0} \geq 0$ (c.f. Chapter VI, Section 2 of [23]), so the proof is completed.

Lemma 6.3 There are $C_{n}>0, n \in \mathbb{N}$, with $C_{1}=1$, such that

$$
\left|\tanh _{2}^{(n)}(x)\right| \leq C_{n} \tanh _{2}^{\prime}(x) \leq \frac{C_{n}}{2}, \quad x \in \mathbb{R}, n \in \mathbb{N} .
$$

Proof Note that $\tanh _{2}^{\prime}(x)=\frac{1}{2} \cosh _{2}^{-2}(x) \in(0,1 / 2]$. So the second " $\leq$ " holds. By induction, one can prove that for every $n$, there are $a_{j}^{(n)} \in \mathbb{R}, 0 \leq j \leq n-1$, such that

$$
\tanh _{2}^{(n)}(x)=\sum_{j=0}^{n-1} a_{j}^{(n)} \cosh _{2}^{-2-j}(x) \sinh _{2}^{j}(x)=\sum_{j=0}^{n-1} a_{j}^{(n)} \cosh _{2}^{-2}(x) \tanh _{2}^{j}(x)
$$

Since $\left|\tanh _{2}^{j}(x)\right| \leq 1$ and $\cosh _{2}^{-2}=2 \tanh _{2}^{\prime}$, we may choose $C_{n}=2 \sum_{j}\left|a_{j}^{(n)}\right|$.
Lemma 6.4 For every $m \in \mathbb{N}$, there is a polynomial $P_{m}(t)$ of degree $m-1$ such that for any $t>0$ and $x \in \mathbb{R},\left|\frac{\partial^{m}}{\partial x^{m}} X_{x}(t)\right| \leq P_{m}(t)$.

Proof Since $X_{x}(t)=u(t, x)+\sqrt{\kappa} B(t), \frac{\partial^{n}}{\partial x^{n}} X_{x}(t)=u^{(n)}(t, x)$. It suffices to show that for every $m \in \mathbb{N}$, there is some polynomial $P_{m}(t)$ of degree $m-1$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|u^{(m)}(t, x)\right| \leq P_{m}(t), \quad t>0, x \in \mathbb{R} . \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $f_{x}(t)=\tau \tanh _{2}^{\prime}\left(X_{x}(t)\right)$. Since $\tau \leq 0$ and $\tanh _{2}^{\prime}>0, f_{x}(t) \leq 0$. Differentiating (6.1) w.r.t. $x$ and using $u^{\prime}(0, x)=1$, we get $u^{\prime}(t, x)=\exp \left(\int_{0}^{t} f_{x}(s) d s\right) \in(0,1]$. Thus, (6.6) holds in the case $n=1$ with $P_{1}(t) \equiv 1$.

Let $n \in \mathbb{N}, n \geq 2$. Suppose that (6.6) holds for any $m \leq n-1$. Differentiating (6.1) $n$ times, by induction we find that there are $b_{n}(\lambda) \in \mathbb{R}$ for $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}$ with $b_{n}((n))=\tau$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} u^{(n)}(t, x)=\sum_{\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{n}} b_{n}(\lambda) \tanh _{2}^{(l(\lambda))}\left(X_{x}(t)\right) \prod_{k=1}^{l(\lambda)} u^{\left(\lambda_{k}\right)}(t, x), \quad u^{(n)}(0, x)=0 . \tag{6.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe that the term $u^{(n)}(t, x)$ appears only once in (6.7), i.e, in the case $\lambda=((n))$, and the coefficient is $\tau \tanh _{2}^{\prime}\left(X_{x}(t)\right)=f_{x}(t)$. From Lemma 6.3 and induction hypothesis, there is a polynomial $g_{x}(t)$ of degree $n-2$ such that

$$
\partial_{t} u^{(n)}(t, x)=f_{x}(t) u^{(n)}(t, x)+g_{x}(t), \quad u^{(n)}(0, x)=0 .
$$

Solving this inequality using the fact that $f_{x}(t) \leq 0$, we can conclude that (6.6) holds in the case $m=n$, which finishes the proof.

### 6.2 Some estimations

We will need some estimations about the limits of $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}-\tanh _{2}$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}(t, z)=\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, z)-\tanh _{2}(z) \tag{6.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (2.12) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}(t, x)=\sum_{2 \mid n \neq 0} \tanh _{2}^{\prime}(x-n t)=\sum_{2 \mid n \neq 0} \frac{1}{2} \cosh _{2}^{-2}(x-n t)>0 \tag{6.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 6.5 Let $C_{n}, n \in \mathbb{N}$, be as in Lemma 6.3. Note that $C_{1}=1$. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}(t, x)\right| \leq \frac{|x|}{t}+3+\frac{2 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}, \quad t>0, x \in \mathbb{R}  \tag{6.10}\\
& \left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \leq C_{n}\left(\frac{1}{2}+\frac{4 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}\right), \quad t>0, x \in \mathbb{R}, n \in \mathbb{N} \tag{6.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Moreover, for any $c>0$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}(t, x)\right| \leq \frac{2 e^{(c-2) t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}, \quad \text { if } t>0, x \in \mathbb{R},|x| \leq c t  \tag{6.12}\\
& \left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \leq C_{n} \frac{4 e^{(c-2) t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}, \quad \text { if } \quad t>0, x \in \mathbb{R},|x| \leq c t, n \in \mathbb{N} . \tag{6.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof We first show (6.12). From (2.12) and (6.8) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}(t, x) & =\sum_{m=1}^{\infty}\left(\tanh _{2}(x-2 m t)+\tanh _{2}(x+2 m t)\right) \\
& =\sum_{m=1}^{\infty}\left(-\frac{e^{2 m t}-e^{x}}{e^{2 m t}+e^{x}}+\frac{e^{2 m t}-e^{-x}}{e^{2 m t}+e^{-x}}\right)=\sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \frac{2\left(e^{x}-e^{-x}\right)}{e^{2 m t}+e^{-2 m t}+e^{x}+e^{-x}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}(t, x)\right| \leq \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \frac{2 e^{|x|}}{e^{2 m t}}=\frac{2 e^{|x|-2 t}}{1-e^{-2 t}} \tag{6.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then (6.12) is a direct consequence of this inequality.
Secondly, we show (6.10). Since $\left|\tanh _{2}(x)\right| \leq 1$, from (6.8) it suffices to show

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, x)\right| \leq \frac{|x|}{t}+2+\frac{2 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}} \tag{6.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

We first consider the case $|x| \leq t$. From (6.14) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, x)\right| \leq\left|\tanh _{2}(x)\right|+\left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}(t, x)\right| \leq 1+\frac{2 e^{|x|-2 t}}{1-e^{-2 t}} \leq 1+\frac{2 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}} \tag{6.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, (6.15) holds in this case.
Then we consider the case $|x| \geq t$. There exists $m \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $(2 m-1) t \leq$ $|x| \leq(2 m+1) t$. Since $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}$ is odd, we only need to consider the case that $(2 m-$ 1) $t \leq x \leq(2 m+1) t$. Let $x_{0}=x-2 m t$. Then $\left|x_{0}\right| \leq t$. From (2.10) we have $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, x)=2 m+\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}\left(t, x_{0}\right)$. From (6.16) with $x=x_{0}$ we have

$$
\left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}(t, x)\right| \leq 2 m+\left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}\left(t, x_{0}\right)\right| \leq 2 m+1+\frac{2 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}} \leq \frac{|x|}{t}+2+\frac{2 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}
$$

where the last inequality uses $\frac{|x|}{t} \geq 2 m-1$. So we have (6.15) and (6.10).
Now we prove (6.11) and (6.13). From (6.9) we have

$$
\begin{align*}
0<\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}(t, x) & =\sum_{2 \mid n \neq 0} \frac{1}{2} \cosh _{2}^{-2}(|n t-x|) \leq \sum_{2 \mid n \neq 0} \frac{1}{2} \cosh _{2}^{-2}(|n| t-|x|) \\
& =\sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \cosh _{2}^{-2}(2 m t-|x|) \leq 4 \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} e^{|x|-2 m t}=\frac{4 e^{|x|-2 t}}{1-e^{-2 t}} \tag{6.17}
\end{align*}
$$

which implies (6.13) in the case $n=1$. From (6.17) we have $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime}(t, x)<\frac{1}{2}+\frac{4 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}$ if $|x| \leq t$. Since $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime}$ has period $2 t$, this inequality holds for all $x \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}<\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime}$, (6.11) holds in the case $n=1$. From (6.9) and Lemma 6.3 we have $\left|\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \leq$ $C_{n} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}(t, x)$. So (6.11) and (6.13) in the case $n \geq 2$ follow from those in the case $n=1$.

Lemma 6.6 For every $n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$, there is a constant $D_{n}>0$ such that for any $j \in\{1,2\}, t>0$, and $x \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \leq D_{n}\left(\frac{|x|}{t}+3+\frac{2 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}\right)^{j}\left(\frac{1}{2}+\frac{4 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}\right) . \tag{6.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, for any $n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$ and $c>0$, there is a constant $D_{n}>0$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \leq D_{n}\left(\frac{2 e^{(c-2) t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}\right)^{j+1}, \quad \text { if } t>0, x \in \mathbb{R},|x| \leq c t \tag{6.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof Let $A(t, x)=\frac{|x|}{t}+3+\frac{2 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}, B(t, x)=\frac{1}{2}+\frac{4 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}$, and $C_{c}(t, x)=\frac{2 e^{(c-2) t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}$. In this proof, by $X \lesssim Y$ we mean that there is a constant $C$ such that $X \leq C Y$. Here $C$ may depend on $n$ if $X$ depends on $n$. From (6.10), (6.11), (6.12), and (6.13), we see that

$$
\begin{align*}
&\left|\mathbf{H}_{I, q}(t, x)\right| \lesssim A(t, x), \quad\left|\mathbf{H}_{I, q}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \lesssim B(t, x) \lesssim A(t, x), \quad x \in \mathbb{R}, n \in \mathbb{N} . \\
&\left|\mathbf{H}_{I, q}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \lesssim C_{c}(t, x), \quad \text { if } x \in \mathbb{R},|x| \leq c t, n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\} . \tag{6.20}
\end{align*}
$$

As $t \rightarrow \infty, \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I} \rightarrow \tanh _{2}$. Then (2.13) becomes $0=\tanh _{2}^{\prime \prime}+\tanh _{2}^{\prime} \tanh _{2}$, which can be proved directly. From (2.13), (6.8), and the above equation, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}=\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime \prime}+\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}+\tanh _{2}^{\prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}+\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime} \tanh _{2} . \tag{6.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then (6.18) and (6.19) in the case $j=1$ and $n=0$ follow from (6.20), (6.21), (6.22), and Lemma 6.3.

Differentiating (2.13) w.r.t. $x$ twice, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\partial_{t} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime} & =\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}+\left(\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \\
\partial_{t} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime \prime} & =\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{(4)}+\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}+3 \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

Differentiating (2.13) w.r.t. $t$ and using the above two displayed formulas, we obtain

$$
\partial_{t}^{2} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}=\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{(4)}+2 \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime \prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}+4 \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime}+\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime \prime}\left(\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}\right)^{2}+2\left(\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I} .
$$

As $t \rightarrow \infty$, this equation tends to the following equation, which can also be checked directly.

$$
0=\tanh _{2}^{(4)}+2 \tanh _{2}^{\prime \prime \prime} \tanh _{2}+4 \tanh _{2}^{\prime \prime} \tanh _{2}^{\prime}+\tanh _{2}^{\prime \prime} \tanh _{2}^{2}+2\left(\tanh _{2}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \tanh _{2}
$$

From (6.8), and the above two equations, we compute

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{t}^{2} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}= & \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(4)}+2 \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime \prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}+2 \tanh _{2}^{\prime \prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q} \\
& +2 \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime \prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}+4 \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime} \\
& +4 \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime \prime} \tanh _{2}^{\prime}+\tanh _{2}^{\prime \prime}\left(\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}\right)^{2}+2 \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q} \tanh _{2}+2 \tanh _{2}^{\prime \prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q} \tanh _{2} \\
& +\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime \prime}\left(\tanh _{2}\right)^{2}+\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime \prime}\left(\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}\right)^{2}+2\left(\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}+4 \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime} \tanh _{2}^{\prime} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q} \\
& +2\left(\tanh _{2}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}+2\left(\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \tanh _{2}+4 \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime} \tanh _{2}^{\prime} \tanh _{2} . \tag{6.23}
\end{align*}
$$

Then (6.18) and (6.19) in the case $j=2$ and $n=0$ follow from (6.20), (6.21), (6.23), and Lemma 6.3.

Differentiate (6.22) and (6.23) $n$ times w.r.t. $x$. We see that $\partial_{t} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(n)}$ can be expressed as a sum of finitely many terms, whose factors are $\mathbf{H}_{I, q}^{(k)}$ or $\tanh _{2}^{(k)}, k \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$. In every term, the factors of the kind $\mathbf{H}_{I, q}^{(k)}$ appear at most twice, and the factor $\mathbf{H}_{I, q}$ appears at most once. So we derive (6.18) and (6.19) in the case $j=1$ and $n \in \mathbb{N}$ from (6.20), (6.21), and Lemma 6.3. We see that $\partial_{t}^{2} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(n)}$ can be expressed as a sum of finitely many terms, whose factors are constant, $\mathbf{H}_{I, q}^{(k)}$, or $\tanh _{2}^{(k)}$. In every term, the
factors of the kind $\mathbf{H}_{I, q}^{(k)}$ appear at most three times, and the factor $\mathbf{H}_{I, q}$ appears at most twice. So we derive (6.18) and (6.19) in the case $j=2$ and $n \in \mathbb{N}$ from (6.20), (6.21), and Lemma 6.3.

### 6.3 Feynman-Kac expression

We begin with a lemma, which can be proved directly. Recall the definition of $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}$ in (2.9).

Lemma 6.7 Let $\Psi$ and $\widehat{\Psi}$ be functions defined on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$. The following expressions are equivalent:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \widehat{\Psi}(t, x)=e^{\frac{x^{2}}{2 \kappa t}}\left(\frac{\pi}{t}\right)^{\sigma+\frac{1}{2}} \Psi\left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{t}, \quad \frac{\pi}{t} x\right) .  \tag{6.24}\\
& \Psi(t, x)=e^{-\frac{x^{2}}{2 \kappa t}}\left(\frac{\pi}{t}\right)^{\sigma+\frac{1}{2}} \widehat{\Psi}\left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{t}, \quad \frac{\pi}{t} x\right) . \tag{6.25}
\end{align*}
$$

If the above two equalities hold, then $\Psi$ satisfies (4.5) if and only if $\widehat{\Psi}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\partial_{t} \widehat{\Psi}=\frac{\kappa}{2} \widehat{\Psi}^{\prime \prime}+\sigma \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime} \widehat{\Psi} \tag{6.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

As $t \rightarrow \infty, \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime} \rightarrow \tanh _{2}^{\prime}$, so (6.26) tends to

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\partial_{t} \widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}=\frac{\kappa}{2} \widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}^{\prime \prime}+\sigma \tanh _{2}^{\prime}(x) \widehat{\Psi}_{\infty} \tag{6.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\tau$ be the non-positive root of the equation $\frac{\tau^{2}}{2 \kappa}=\frac{\tau}{4}+\frac{\sigma}{2}$, i.e., $\tau=\kappa / 4-$ $\sqrt{\kappa^{2} / 16+\kappa \sigma}$. Then $\tau=\frac{\kappa}{2}-2$ when $\sigma=\frac{4}{\kappa}-1$. It is easy to check that (6.27) has a simple solution:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}(t, x)=e^{-\frac{\tau^{2} t}{2 \kappa}} \cosh _{2}^{\frac{2}{\kappa} \tau}(x) \tag{6.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Recall the $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}$ defined in (6.8). The proof of the following lemma is straightforward.
Lemma 6.8 Let $\widehat{\Psi}$ and $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ be defined on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$, and satisfy $\widehat{\Psi}=\widehat{\Psi}_{\infty} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}$, where $\Psi_{\infty}$ is defined by (6.28). Then $\widehat{\Psi}$ satisfies (6.26) if and only if $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\partial_{t} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}=\frac{\kappa}{2} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{\prime \prime}+\tau \tanh _{2} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{\prime}+\sigma \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime} \widehat{\Psi}_{q} \tag{6.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ solves (6.29). Let $X_{x_{0}}(t)$ be as in (6.2). Fix $t_{0}>0$ and $x_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Let

$$
M(t)=\widehat{\Psi}_{q}\left(t_{0}+t, X_{x_{0}}(t)\right) \exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{t} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t_{0}+s, X_{x_{0}}(s)\right) d s\right) .
$$

From (6.2), (6.29), and Itô's formula, we see that $M(t)$ is a local martingale. If $M(t)$ is a martingale on $[0, \infty]$, and $\widehat{\Psi}_{q} \rightarrow 1$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$, then from $M_{0}=\widehat{\Psi}_{q}\left(t_{0}, x_{0}\right)$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\Psi}_{q}\left(t_{0}, x_{0}\right)=\mathbf{E}\left[\exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t_{0}+s, X_{x_{0}}(s)\right) d s\right)\right] . \tag{6.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

This Feynman-Kac formula holds under many additional assumptions. We do not try to prove it. Instead, we now define $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ by (6.30). We will prove that $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ is finite and differentiable, and solves (6.29).

### 6.4 Regularity

Fix $c_{0} \in\left(1+\frac{\kappa}{4} \sigma, 2\right)$. This is possible because $\sigma \in\left[0, \frac{4}{\kappa}\right)$. Then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp \left(\frac{\sigma}{2\left(c_{0}-1\right)}-\frac{2}{\kappa}\right)<1 \tag{6.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Throughout this subsection, we use $C$ to denote a positive constant, which depends only on $\kappa, \sigma, c_{0}$, and could change between lines. The symbol $X \lesssim Y$ means that $X \leq C Y$ for some $C$. Let $\alpha(t)=\frac{4}{1-e^{-2 t}}$. Then $t^{-1}+1 \lesssim \alpha(t) \lesssim t^{-1}+1$. For $m \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$, let $\mathcal{E}_{m}$ denote the event that $\left|X_{x}(s)\right| \leq s+m$ for all $s \geq 0$. From (6.4) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{P}\left[\mathcal{E}_{m}^{c}\right] \leq 2 e^{\frac{2}{\kappa}(|x|-m)}, \quad m \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\} \tag{6.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 6.1 $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ is finite and satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
1 \leq \widehat{\Psi}_{q}(t, x) \leq \exp \left(C\left(t^{-1}+1\right) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}\right)\left(1+C e^{\frac{2}{\kappa}|x|-\frac{2}{\kappa} c_{0} t}\right) \tag{6.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof Fix $t>0$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}$. Assume that $\mathcal{E}_{m}$ occurs for some $m \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$. If $s \geq \frac{m-c_{0} t}{c_{0}-1}$ then $\left|X_{x}(s)\right| \leq s+m \leq c_{0}(s+t)$, so from (6.13) with $C_{1}=1$ we have

$$
\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) \leq \frac{4 e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right)(s+t)}}{1-e^{-2(s+t)}} \leq \alpha(t) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right)(s+t)}
$$

If $0 \leq s \leq \frac{m-c_{0} t}{c_{0}-1}$, from $-1 \leq c_{0}-2$ and (6.11) with $C_{1}=1$, we have

$$
\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right)<\frac{1}{2}+\frac{4 e^{-(s+t)}}{1-e^{-2(s+t)}} \leq \frac{1}{2}+\alpha(t) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right)(s+t)},
$$

Since $c_{0}-2<0$, at the event $\mathcal{E}_{m}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) d s \leq \frac{1}{2} \cdot \frac{\left(m-c_{0} t\right) \vee 0}{c_{0}-1}+\frac{\alpha(t) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}}{2-c_{0}} \tag{6.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $H(t)=\exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) d s\right)$. From (6.32) and (6.34) we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\widehat{\Psi}_{q}(t, x)= & \mathbf{E}\left[1_{\mathcal{E}_{\left\lfloor c_{0} t\right\rfloor}} H(t)\right]+\sum_{m=\left\lfloor c_{0} t\right\rfloor}^{\infty} \mathbf{E}\left[1_{\mathcal{E}_{m+1} \backslash \mathcal{E}_{m}} H(t)\right] \\
\leq & \exp \left(\frac{\sigma \alpha(t) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}}{2-c_{0}}\right) \\
& +\sum_{m=\left\lfloor c_{0} t\right\rfloor}^{\infty} 2 e^{\frac{2}{\kappa}(|x|-m)} \exp \left(\frac{1}{2} \frac{\sigma\left(m+1-\left\lfloor c_{0} t\right\rfloor\right)}{c_{0}-1}+\frac{\sigma \alpha(t) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}}{2-c_{0}}\right) . \tag{6.35}
\end{align*}
$$

Change index using $m=l+\left\lfloor c_{0} t\right\rfloor$. The second term of the RHS of (6.35) equals

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 \exp \left(\frac{2|x|}{\kappa}-\frac{2\left\lfloor c_{0} t\right\rfloor}{\kappa}+\frac{\sigma}{2\left(c_{0}-1\right)}+\frac{\sigma \alpha(t) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}}{2-c_{0}}\right) \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \exp \left(\frac{\sigma}{2\left(c_{0}-1\right)}-\frac{2}{\kappa}\right)^{l} . \tag{6.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (6.31), the infinite sum is finite. Thus, from $\widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}>0, \sigma \geq 0$, and (6.35), we have

$$
1 \leq \widehat{\Psi}_{q}(t, x) \leq \exp \left(\frac{\sigma \alpha(t) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}}{2-c_{0}}\right)\left(1+C e^{\frac{2|x|}{\kappa}-\frac{2 c_{0} t}{\kappa}}\right) .
$$

Then (6.33) follows from this formula and that $\alpha(t) \lesssim t^{-1}+1$.
Let $n \in \mathbb{N}$. Formally differentiate (6.30) $n$ times w.r.t. $x$. If the differentiation commutes with the integration and expectation at every time, then we should have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{(n)}(t, x)=\mathbf{E}\left[\exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) d s\right) \cdot \mathbf{Q}_{0, n}\left(v_{0, k, \lambda}(t, x)\right)\right] \tag{6.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{Q}_{0, n}$ is a polynomial of degree $\leq n$ without constant term in the following variables:

$$
\begin{equation*}
v_{0, k, \lambda}(t, x):=\int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(k)}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) \prod_{r=1}^{l(\lambda)} \frac{\partial^{\lambda_{r}}}{\partial x^{\lambda_{r}}} X_{x}(s) d s, \quad k \in \mathbb{N}, \lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{\mathbb{N}} . \tag{6.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

With $\mathbf{Q}_{0,0} \equiv 1$, (6.37) becomes (6.30). Let $n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$. Formally differentiate (6.37) w.r.t. $t$. If the differentiation commutes with the integration and expectation, then we should have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{(n)}(t, x)=\mathbf{E}\left[\exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) d s\right) \cdot \mathbf{Q}_{1, n}\left(v_{0, k, \lambda}, v_{1, k, \lambda}\right)\right], \tag{6.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{Q}_{1, n}$ is a polynomial of degree $\leq n+1$ without constant term in the variables $v_{0, k, \lambda}$ defined by (6.38) and

$$
\begin{equation*}
v_{1, k, \lambda}(t, x):=\int_{0}^{\infty} \partial_{t} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(k)}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) \prod_{r=1}^{l(\lambda)} \frac{\partial^{\lambda_{r}}}{\partial x^{\lambda_{r}}} X_{x}(s) d s, \quad k \in \mathbb{N}, \lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{\mathbb{N}} \cup\left\{\mathbb{N}^{0}\right\} . \tag{6.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here by $\lambda \in \mathbb{N}^{0}$ we mean that the factor $\prod \frac{\partial^{\lambda_{r}}}{\partial x^{\lambda_{r}}} X_{x}(s)$ disappears. Moreover, in every term of $\mathbf{Q}_{1, n}$, factors $v_{1, k, \lambda}$ appear at most once.

Formally differentiate (6.39) w.r.t. $t$. If the differentiation commutes with the integration and expectation, then we should have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t}^{2} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{(n)}(t, x)=\mathbf{E}\left[\exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) d s\right) \cdot \mathbf{Q}_{2, n}\left(v_{0, k, \lambda}, v_{1, k, \lambda}, v_{2, k, \lambda}\right)\right], \tag{6.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{Q}_{2, n}$ is a polynomial of degree $\leq n+2$ without constant term in the variables $v_{0, k, \lambda}$ defined by (6.38), $v_{1, k, \lambda}$ defined by (6.40), and
$v_{2, k, \lambda}(t, x):=\int_{0}^{\infty} \partial_{t}^{2} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(k)}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) \prod_{j=1}^{l(\lambda)} \frac{\partial^{\lambda_{j}}}{\partial x^{\lambda_{j}}} X_{x}(s) d s, \quad k \in \mathbb{N}, \lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{\mathbb{N}} \cup\left\{\mathbb{N}^{0}\right\}$.
Moreover, in every term of $\mathbf{Q}_{2, n}$, factors $v_{2, k, \lambda}$ appears at most once; when a factor $v_{2, k, \lambda}$ appears, factors $v_{1, k, \lambda}$ disappear; and when factors $v_{2, k, \lambda}$ disappear, factors $v_{1, k, \lambda}$ appear at most twice.

Now we suppose $\mathcal{E}_{m}$ occurs for some $m \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$. Using (6.11), (6.13), (6.38), Lemma 6.4, and the argument in (6.34), we conclude that, for any $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{\mathbb{N}}$, there is a polynomial $P_{k, \lambda}$ with no constant term such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|v_{0, k, \lambda}(t, x)\right| \leq P_{k, \lambda}\left(\left(m-c_{0} t\right) \vee 0\right)+C \alpha(t) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t} . \tag{6.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $j \in\{1,2\}$ and $n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$. If $s \geq \frac{m-c_{0} t}{c_{0}-1}$ then $\left|X_{x}(s)\right| \leq s+m \leq c_{0}(s+t)$, so from (6.19) we have

$$
\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(n)}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right)\right| \leq D_{n}\left(\frac{2 e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right)(t+s)}}{1-e^{-2 t}}\right)^{j+1} \lesssim \alpha(t)^{j+1} e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right)(t+s)}
$$

If $m \geq c_{0} t$ and $0 \leq s \leq \frac{m-c_{0} t}{c_{0}-1}$, from (6.18) and the definition of $\mathcal{E}_{m}$, we see that for $j=1,2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{(n)}\left(t, X_{x}(s)\right)\right| & \leq D_{n}\left(\frac{\left|X_{x}(s)\right|}{t+s}+3+\frac{2 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}\right)^{j}\left(\frac{1}{2}+\frac{4 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}\right) \\
& \leq D_{n}\left(\frac{m-c_{0} t}{t}+c_{0}+4+\frac{2 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}\right)^{j}\left(\frac{1}{2}+\frac{4 e^{-t}}{1-e^{-2 t}}\right) \\
& \lesssim\left(\left(m-c_{0} t\right)^{j}+1\right) \alpha(t)^{j+1}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, from Lemma 6.4, for $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\lambda \in \mathcal{P}_{\mathbb{N}} \cup\left\{\mathbb{N}^{0}\right\}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|v_{j, k, \lambda}(t, x)\right| \lesssim \alpha(t)^{j+1}\left(e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}+P_{j, k, \lambda}\left(\left(m-c_{0} t\right) \vee 0\right)\right), \quad j=1,2 \tag{6.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{j, k, \lambda}$ is a polynomial with no constant term.
Let $(j, n) \in\{0,1,2\} \times(\mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}) \backslash\{(0,0)\}$. From (6.42), (6.43), and the properties of $\mathbf{Q}_{0, n}, n \in \mathbb{N}, \mathbf{Q}_{1, n}$ and $\mathbf{Q}_{2, n}, n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$, we see that, at the event $\mathcal{E}_{m}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\mathbf{Q}_{j, n}\right| \lesssim \alpha(t)^{2 j}\left[P_{j, n}\left(\left(m-c_{0} t\right) \vee 0\right)+Q_{j, n}\left(\left(m-c_{0} t\right) \vee 0\right) \alpha(t)^{n} e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}\right] \tag{6.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{j, n}$ and $Q_{j, n}$ are polynomials, and $P_{j, n}(0)=0$.
Proposition 6.2 $\operatorname{For}(j, n) \in\{0,1,2\} \times(\mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}) \backslash\{(0,0)\}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbf{E} & {\left[\exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) d s\right) \cdot\left|\mathbf{Q}_{j, n}\right|\right] } \\
& \lesssim \exp \left(C\left(t^{-1}+1\right) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}\right)\left(t^{-n-2 j}+1\right)\left(e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}+e^{\frac{2|x|}{\kappa}-\frac{2 c_{0} t}{\kappa}}\right), \tag{6.45}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof Let $H_{j, n}(t)=\exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t+s, X_{x}(s)\right) d s\right) \cdot\left|\mathbf{Q}_{j, n}\right|$. Recall that (6.34) and (6.44) hold at the event $\mathcal{E}_{m}$. Using (6.32) and the argument in (6.35) and (6.36), we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbf{E}\left[H_{j, n}(t)\right]=\mathbf{E}\left[1_{\mathcal{E}_{\left\lfloor c_{0} t\right\rfloor}} H_{j, n}(t)\right]+\sum_{m=\left\lfloor c_{0} t\right\rfloor}^{\infty} \mathbf{E}\left[1_{\mathcal{E}_{m+1} \backslash \mathcal{E}_{m}} H_{j, n}(t)\right] \\
& \quad \lesssim \exp \left(C \alpha(t) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}\right) \alpha(t)^{2 j+n} e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}+\exp \left(\frac{2|x|}{\kappa}-\frac{2 c_{0} t}{\kappa}+C \alpha(t) e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}\right) . \\
& \quad \cdot \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \alpha(t)^{2 j}\left(P_{j, n}(l+1)+Q_{j, n}(l+1) \alpha(t)^{n} e^{\left(c_{0}-2\right) t}\right) \exp \left(\frac{\sigma}{2\left(c_{0}-1\right)}-\frac{2}{\kappa}\right)^{l} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then (6.45) follows from (6.31) and that $\alpha(t) \lesssim t^{-1}+1$ and $\alpha(t)^{2 j+n} \lesssim t^{-n-2 j}+1$.

Theorem 6.1 The function $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ is $C^{\infty, \infty}$ differentiable and solves (6.29). Moreover, for $j \in\{0,1,2\}, n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$, there is a positive continuous function $c_{j, n}(t)$ on $(0, \infty)$ such that for any $t \in(0, \infty)$ and $x \in \mathbb{R},\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \leq c_{j, n}(t) e^{\frac{2}{\kappa}|x|}$.

Proof For $n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$, define $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[0, n]}, \widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[1, n]}(t, x)$ and $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[2, n]}(t, x)$ to be equal to the RHS of (6.37), (6.39) and (6.41), respectively. From the above two propositions, these functions are well defined, and there are positive continuous functions $c_{j, n}(t)$ on $(0, \infty)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}(t, x)\right| \leq c_{j, n}(t) e^{\frac{2}{\kappa}|x|}, \quad j=0,1,2, \quad n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\} . \tag{6.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}, j \in\{0,1,2\}, t \in(0, \infty)$, and $x_{1}<x_{2} \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $\left|\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n+1]}\right|$ satisfies (6.46), from Fubini's Theorem, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n+1]}(t, x) d x=\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}\left(t, x_{2}\right)-\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}\left(t, x_{1}\right) \tag{6.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}$ is absolutely continuous in $x$ when $t$ is fixed, and its partial derivative w.r.t. $x$ is a.s. equal to $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n+1]}$. Since $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n+1]}$ is continuous in $x$ for fixed $t$, we see that $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}$ is continuously differentiable in $x$, and the partial derivative exactly equals $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}$. The above holds for any $n \in \mathbb{N}$, so $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, 0]}$ is $C^{\infty}$ differentiable in $x$ when $t$ is fixed, and $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}$ is its $n$-th partial derivative w.r.t. $x$. Especially, since $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}=\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[0,0]}$, we see that $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ is $C^{\infty}$ differentiable in $x$ when $t$ is fixed, and $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[0, n]}$ is its $n$-th partial derivative w.r.t. $x$.

A similar argument using Fubini's Theorem shows that, for any $n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$, $j \in\{0,1\}, \widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}$ is absolutely continuous in $t$ when $x$ is fixed, and its partial derivative w.r.t. $t$ is a.s. equal to $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j+1, n]}$. So $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[0, n]}$ is continuously differentiable in $t$ when $x$ is fixed, and the partial derivative exactly equals $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[1, n]}$. From (6.46) and (6.47), we see that $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}$ is locally uniformly Lipschitz continuous in $x$. We have seen that $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}$ is continuous in $t$ for every fixed $x$. So $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}$ is continuous in both $t$ and $x$. Thus, $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}=\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[0,0]}$ is $C^{1, \infty}$ differentiable.

Fix $t_{0} \in(0, \infty)$ and $x_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $M(t)=\mathbf{E}\left[\exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t_{0}+s, X_{x_{0}}(s)\right) d s\right)\right.$ $\left.\mid \mathcal{F}_{t}\right\rceil, t \geq 0$. Then $M(t), 0 \leq t<\infty$, is a uniformly integrable martingale. From (6.30) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
M(t)=\widehat{\Psi}_{q}\left(t_{0}+t, X_{x_{0}}(t)\right) \exp \left(\sigma \int_{0}^{t} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I, q}^{\prime}\left(t_{0}+s, X_{x_{0}}(s)\right) d s\right) . \tag{6.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (6.2), Itô's formula, and the differentiability of $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$, we see that $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ solves (6.29) for $t \geq t_{0}$. Since this is true for any $t_{0} \in(0, \infty), \widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ solves (6.29).

Since $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ is $C^{1, \infty}$ differentiable, the same is true for the RHS of (6.29). Thus, $\partial_{t} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ is also $C^{1, \infty}$ differentiable. So $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ is $C^{2, \infty}$ differentiable. Iterating this argument, we conclude that $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ is $C^{\infty, \infty}$ differentiable. The previous argument shows that $\partial_{t}^{j} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{(n)}=$ $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{[j, n]}$ for any $j \in\{0,1,2\}$ and $n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$. The bounds of $\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \widehat{\Psi}_{q}^{(n)}\right|$ then follow from (6.46).

Theorem 6.2 Let $\widehat{\Psi}_{0}=\widehat{\Psi}_{q} \cdot \widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}$, where $\widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}$ is defined by (6.28). Then $\widehat{\Psi}_{0}$ is a positive $C^{\infty, \infty}$ differentiable function on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$ and solves (6.26). Moreover, $j \in\{0,1,2\}$, for $n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$, there is a positive continuous function $c_{j, n}(t)$ on $(0, \infty)$ such that, for any $t \in(0, \infty)$ and $x \in \mathbb{R},\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \widehat{\Psi}_{0}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \leq c_{j, n}(t) e^{\frac{2}{\kappa}|x|}$.

Proof Since $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ and $\widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}$ are both positive and $C^{\infty, \infty}$ differentiable, the same is true for $\widehat{\Psi}_{0}=\widehat{\Psi}_{q} \cdot \widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}$. Since $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ solves (6.29), from Lemma 6.8, $\widehat{\Psi}_{0}$ solves (6.26). From Lemma 6.3, (6.28), and that $\tau \leq 0$, we see that for any $j, n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\},\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}^{(n)}(t, x)\right|$ is bounded by a positive continuous function in $t$, which, together with Theorem 6.1, implies the upper bounds of $\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \widehat{\Psi}_{0}^{(n)}(t, x)\right|$.

Theorem 6.3 Let $\Psi_{0}$ be the transformation of the above $\widehat{\Psi}_{0}$ via (6.25) (with $\widehat{\Psi}$ replaced by $\left.\widehat{\Psi}_{0}\right)$. Then $\Psi_{0}$ is a $C^{\infty, \infty}$ differentiable positive function on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$ and solves (4.5). Moreover, for $j \in\{0,1,2\}, n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$, there is a function $h_{j, n}(t,|x|)$, which is a polynomial in $|x|$ for any fixed $t$, and every coefficient is a positive continuous function in $t$, such that for any $t \in(0, \infty)$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}$, $\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \Psi_{0}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \leq h_{j, n}(t,|x|) e^{-\frac{x^{2}}{2 k t}+\frac{2 \pi|x|}{\kappa t}}$.

Proof Since $\widehat{\Psi}_{0}>0, \Psi_{0}>0$ also. The differentiability of $\Psi_{0}$ is obvious. Since $\widehat{\Psi}_{0}$ solves (6.29), from Lemma 6.7, $\Psi_{0}$ solves (4.5). Let $\Psi_{a}(t, x)=\widehat{\Psi}_{0}\left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{t}, \frac{\pi}{t} x\right)$. From Theorem 6.2, it is straightforward to check that for every $j \in\{0,1,2\}, n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$, there is a function $f_{j, n}(t,|x|)$, which is a polynomial in $|x|$ of degree $j$ when $t$ is fixed, and every coefficient is a positive continuous function in $t$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \Psi_{0}^{(n)}(t, x)\right| \leq f_{j, n}(t,|x|) e^{\frac{2}{k} \frac{\pi}{t}|x|}, \quad t>0, x \in \mathbb{R} \tag{6.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is easy to verify that for every $j \in\{0,1,2\}, n \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$, there is a function $g_{j, n}(t,|x|)$, which is a polynomial in $|x|$, and every coefficient is a positive continuous function in $t$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \partial_{x}^{n}\left(e^{-\frac{x^{2}}{2 k t}}\left(\frac{\pi}{t}\right)^{\sigma+\frac{1}{2}}\right)\right| \leq g_{j, n}(t,|x|) e^{-\frac{x^{2}}{2 k t}}, \quad t>0, x \in \mathbb{R} \tag{6.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (6.25), $\Psi_{0}(t, x)=e^{-\frac{x^{2}}{2 k t}}\left(\frac{\pi}{t}\right)^{\sigma+\frac{1}{2}} \Psi_{a}(t, x)$. So we get the upper bounds of $\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \Psi_{0}^{(n)}(t, x)\right|$ from (6.49) and (6.50).

Theorem 6.4 Let $\Psi_{0}$ be as in the above theorem. Let $\Gamma_{0}=\Psi_{0} \Theta_{I}^{-\frac{2}{\kappa}}$ and $\Gamma_{m}(t, x)=$ $\Gamma_{0}(t, x-2 m \pi), m \in \mathbb{Z}$. For $s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$, let $\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}=\sum_{m \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{\frac{2 \pi}{\kappa} m s_{0}} \Gamma_{m}$. Then $\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ is a $C^{\infty, \infty}$ differentiable positive function on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$, satisfies (4.2), and solves (4.4).

Proof Let $\Psi_{m}(t, x)=\Psi_{0}(t, x-2 m \pi)$ for $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\Psi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}=\sum_{m \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{\frac{2 \pi}{\kappa} m s_{0}} \Psi_{m}$. Since $\Theta_{I}$ has period $2 \pi$, we have $\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}=\Psi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle} \Theta_{I}^{-\frac{2}{\kappa}}$. Since $\Theta_{I}$ is a $C^{\infty, \infty}$ differentiable positive function with period $2 \pi$, from Lemma 4.1 we suffice to show that $\Psi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ is a $C^{\infty, \infty}$ differentiable positive function, satisfies (4.2), and solves (4.5). It is
clear from the definition that $\Psi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ satisfies (4.2). Since $\Psi_{0}$ is a $C^{\infty, \infty}$ differentiable positive function that solves (4.5), and $\mathbf{H}_{I}$ has period $2 \pi$, every $\Psi_{m}$ also satisfies these properties. So $\Psi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ is positive. The upper bounds of $\left|\partial_{t}^{j} \Psi_{0}^{(n)}(t, x)\right|$ imply that $\Psi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ is finite, and the series $\sum_{m \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{\frac{2 \pi}{\kappa} m s_{0}} \partial_{t}^{j} \Psi_{m}^{(n)}$ converges locally uniformly for every $j, n \geq 0$. Fubini's Theorem implies that $\Psi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ is $C^{\infty, \infty}$ differentiable and $\partial_{t}^{j} \Psi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}^{(n)}=\sum_{m \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{\frac{2 \pi}{\kappa} m s_{0}} \partial_{t}^{j} \Psi_{m}^{(n)}$ Thus, $\Psi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ also solves (4.5).

### 6.5 Distributions

Proposition 6.3 Let $p>0, s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$, and $x_{0}, y_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $\Gamma_{m}, m \in \mathbb{Z}$, and $\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ be as in Theorem 6.4. Let $\Lambda_{*}=\kappa \frac{\Gamma_{*}^{\prime}}{\Gamma_{*}}$ for $* \in\left\{m,\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle\right\}$. For $m \in \mathbb{Z}$, let $\widetilde{\beta}_{m}$ be the covering annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{0}\right)$ trace in $\mathbb{S}_{p}^{*}$ started from $x_{0}$ with marked point $y_{0}+2 m \pi+$ pi. Let $\widetilde{\beta}_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ be the covering annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\right)$ trace in $\mathbb{S}_{p}$ started from $x_{0}$ with marked point $y_{0}+$ pi. Let $\mathbb{P}_{\widetilde{\beta}, m}, m \in \mathbb{Z}$, and $\mathbb{P}_{\widetilde{\beta},\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ denote the distributions of $\widetilde{\beta}_{m}, m \in \mathbb{Z}$, and $\widetilde{\beta}_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$, respectively. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{P}_{\widetilde{\beta},\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}=\sum_{m \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{\frac{2 \pi}{\kappa} m s_{0}} \frac{\Gamma_{m}\left(p, x_{0}-y_{0}\right)}{\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\left(p, x_{0}-y_{0}\right)} \mathbb{P}_{\widetilde{\beta}, m} \tag{6.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof For $m \in \mathbb{Z}$, let $\xi_{m}(t), 0 \leq t<p$, be the solution to (3.13) with $\Lambda=\Lambda_{0}$ and $y_{0}$ replaced by $y_{0}+2 m \pi$. Let $\xi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}(t)$ be the solution to (3.13) with $\Lambda=\Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$. Then the covering annulus Loewner traces of modulus $p$ driven by $\xi_{m}, m \in \mathbb{Z}$, and $\xi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ have distributions $\mathbb{P}_{\widetilde{\beta}, m}, m \in \mathbb{Z}$, and $\mathbb{P}_{\widetilde{\beta},\left|s_{0}\right\rangle}$, respectively. Let $X_{m}(t)=\xi_{m}(t)-$ $\operatorname{Re} \widetilde{g}^{\xi_{m}}\left(t, y_{0}+2 m \pi+p i\right)+2 m \pi, m \in \mathbb{Z}$, and $X_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}(t)=\xi_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}(t)-\operatorname{Re} \widetilde{g}^{\xi\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\left(t, y_{0}+p i\right)$. Since $\Gamma_{m}(t, x)=\Gamma_{0}(t, x-2 m \pi)$, we have $\Lambda_{m}(t, x)=\Lambda_{0}(t, x-2 m \pi)$. Since $\operatorname{Re} g(t, y+p i)=\tilde{g}_{I}(t, y)$ for $y \in \mathbb{R}$, and $\mathbf{H}_{I}$ is odd and has period $2 \pi$, from (3.9), we find that, for $* \in\left\{m,\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle\right\}$, with $\Phi_{*}:=\Lambda_{*}+\mathbf{H}_{I}, X_{*}(t)$ satisfies

$$
d X_{*}(t)=\sqrt{\kappa} d B(t)+\Phi_{*}\left(p-t, X_{*}(t)\right) d t, \quad X_{*}(0)=x_{0}-y_{0} .
$$

Let $\mathbb{P}_{X, *}$ denote the distributions of $\left(X_{*}(t)\right)$. Since $\xi_{*}(t)=X_{*}(t)+y_{0}-\int_{0}^{t} \mathbf{H}_{I}(p-$ $\left.r, X_{*}(r)\right) d r, 0 \leq t<p$, we suffice to show that (6.51) holds with the subscripts " $\widetilde{\beta}$ " replaced by " $X$ ". The rest of the proof is a standard application of Girsanov theorem. One may check that for every $m \in \mathbb{Z}, M_{m}(t):=e^{\frac{2 \pi}{\kappa} m s_{0} \frac{\Gamma_{m}(p-t, X}{\left.\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\left(p-t, X_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\right\rangle(t)\right)} \text { ) }}$ is a nonnegative martingale w.r.t. $\mathbb{P}_{X,\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$, and satisfies that $\frac{d M_{m}(t)}{M_{m}(t)}=\left(\Lambda_{m}-\Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\right) \frac{d B(t)}{\sqrt{\kappa}}$ and $\sum_{m \in \mathbb{Z}} M_{m}(t)=1$; and we have $\frac{d \mathbb{P}_{X, m}}{d \mathbb{P}_{X,\left\{s_{0}\right\rangle}}=\frac{M_{m}(\infty)}{M_{m}(0)}$.

Remark Since $\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ satisfies (4.2), $\Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ has period $2 \pi$. So $\Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ is a crossing annulus drift function, and we could define the annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\right)$ process. However, each $\Lambda_{m}$ does not have period $2 \pi$. It only makes sense to define the covering annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{m}\right)$ processes.

Proposition 6.4 Let $p>0$ and $x_{0}, y_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $\Gamma_{0}$ be as in Theorem 6.4, and $\Lambda_{0}=$ $\kappa \frac{\Gamma_{0}^{\prime}}{\Gamma_{0}}$. Let $\widetilde{\beta}(t), 0 \leq t<p$, be the covering annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{0}\right)$ trace in $\mathbb{S}_{p}$ started from $x_{0}$ with marked point $y_{0}+$ pi. Then a.s. $\operatorname{dist}\left(y_{0}+p i, \widetilde{\beta}([0, p))+2 \pi \mathbb{Z}\right)=0$.

Proof Let $\xi(t)$ be the driving function, and $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot), 0 \leq t<p$, be the covering Loewner maps. Then $\widetilde{g}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{S}_{p} \backslash(\widetilde{\beta}([0, p))+2 \pi \mathbb{Z})$ conformally onto $\mathbb{S}_{p-t}$, and maps $\mathbb{R}_{p}$ onto $\mathbb{R}_{p-t}$. From Koebe's $1 / 4$ Theorem, we suffice to show that a.s. $\tilde{g}^{\prime}\left(t, y_{0}+p i\right) \cdot \frac{p}{p-t} \rightarrow \infty$ as $t \rightarrow p$.

Let $X(t)=\tilde{\xi}(t)-\operatorname{Re} \widetilde{g}\left(t, y_{0}+p i\right)$ and $\Phi_{0}=\Lambda_{0}+\mathbf{H}_{I}$. Then $X(t)$ satisfies the SDE:

$$
d X(t)=\sqrt{\kappa} d B(t)+\Phi_{0}(p-t, X(t)) d t, \quad 0 \leq t<p .
$$

From (3.8) we have $\ln \left(\widetilde{g}^{\prime}\left(t, y_{0}+p i\right) \cdot \frac{p}{p-t}\right)=\int_{0}^{t}\left(\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}(p-s, X(s))+\frac{1}{p-s}\right) d s$. Let $\widehat{\Phi}_{0}=\kappa \frac{\widehat{\Psi}_{0}^{\prime}}{\widehat{\Psi}_{0}}$. Since $\Psi_{0}$ and $\widehat{\Psi}_{0}$ satisfy (6.24), we have $\widehat{\Phi}_{0}(s, z)=\frac{\pi}{s} \Phi_{0}\left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{s}, \frac{\pi}{s} z\right)+\frac{z}{s}$. Let $\widehat{p}=\frac{\pi^{2}}{p}$ and $\widehat{X}(t)=\frac{\widehat{p}+t}{\pi} X\left(p-\frac{\pi^{2}}{\hat{p}+t}\right), 0 \leq t<\infty$. Then $\widehat{X}(0)=\frac{\widehat{p}}{\pi} X(0)=\frac{\pi}{p}\left(x_{0}-y_{0}\right)$. Applying Itô's formula and time-change of a semimartingale, we see that $\widehat{X}(t)$ satisfies the SDE:

$$
d \widehat{X}(t)=\sqrt{\kappa} \widehat{B}(t)+\widehat{\Phi}_{0}(\widehat{p}+t, \widehat{X}(t)) d t, \quad 0 \leq t<\infty
$$

for some standard Brownian motion $\widehat{B}(t)$. Changing variables using $\widehat{s}=\frac{\pi^{2}}{p-s}-\widehat{p}$, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int_{0}^{t}\left(\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}(p-s, X(s))+\frac{1}{p-s}\right) d s \\
& \quad=\int_{0}^{\hat{t}}\left(\mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}\left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{\widehat{p}+\widehat{s}}, X\left(p-\frac{\pi^{2}}{\widehat{p}+\widehat{s}}\right)\right)+\frac{\widehat{p}+s}{\pi^{2}}\right) \frac{\pi^{2}}{(\widehat{p}+\widehat{s})^{2}} d \widehat{s} \\
& \quad=\int_{0}^{\widehat{t}}\left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{(\widehat{p}+\widehat{s})^{2}} \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}\left(\frac{\pi^{2}}{\widehat{p}+\widehat{s}}, \frac{\pi}{\widehat{p}+\widehat{s}} \widehat{X}(\widehat{s})\right)+\frac{1}{\widehat{p}+s}\right) d \widehat{s} \\
& =\int_{0}^{\widehat{t}} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime}(\widehat{p}+\widehat{s}, \widehat{X}(\widehat{s})) d \widehat{s},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\widehat{t}=\frac{\pi^{2}}{p-t}-\widehat{p}$, and the last equality follows from (2.9). So we have

$$
\lim _{t \rightarrow p^{-}} \ln \left(\widetilde{g}^{\prime}\left(t, y_{0}+p i\right) \cdot \frac{p}{p-t}\right)=\int_{0}^{\infty} \widehat{\mathbf{H}}_{I}^{\prime}(\widehat{p}+\widehat{s}, \widehat{X}(\widehat{s})) d \widehat{s} \geq \int_{0}^{\infty} \tanh _{2}^{\prime}(\widehat{X}(\widehat{s})) d \widehat{s}
$$

where the last inequality follows from (2.12).

From Girsanov theorem and the fact that $\kappa \frac{\widehat{\Psi}_{0}^{\prime}}{\frac{\widehat{\Psi}_{0}^{\prime}}{}}=\kappa \frac{\operatorname{Tanh}_{2}}{\Psi_{q}}+$ we find that the distribution of $(\widehat{X}(t))$ is equivalent to that of $\left(X_{\frac{\pi}{p}\left(x_{0}-y_{0}\right)}(t)\right)$ defined by (6.2), and the Radon-Nikodym derivative is $M(\infty) / M(0)$, where $M(t)$ is defined by (6.48). Since $\left(X_{\frac{\pi}{p}\left(x_{0}-y_{0}\right)}(t)\right)$ is homogeneous and recurrent, we have a.s. $\int_{0}^{\infty} \tanh _{2}^{\prime}\left(X_{\frac{\pi}{p}\left(x_{0}-y_{0}\right)}(t)\right) d t=\infty$, which implies that a.s. $\int_{0}^{\infty} \tanh _{2}^{\prime}(\widehat{X}(\widehat{s})) d \widehat{s}=\infty$. Thus, a.s. $\widetilde{g}^{\prime}\left(t, y_{0}+p i\right) \cdot \frac{p}{p-t} \rightarrow \infty$ as $t \rightarrow p^{-}$.

Corollary 6.1 Let $p>0, s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$, and $x_{0}, y_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ be as in Theorem 6.4, and $\Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}=\kappa \frac{\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}^{\prime}}{\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}}$. Let $\beta(t), 0 \leq t<p$, be the annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\right)$ trace in $\mathbb{S}_{p}$ started from $e^{i x_{0}}$ with marked point $e^{-p+i y_{0}}$. Then a.s. $\operatorname{dist}\left(e^{-p+i y_{0}}, \beta([0, p))\right)=0$.

Proof This follows immediately from the above two propositions.
Remark For the reader's convenience, we now make a list of the functions defined in this section. First, $\widehat{\Psi}_{q}$ is defined by a Feynman-Kac formula (6.30) depending on $\kappa>0$ and $\sigma \in\left[0, \frac{4}{\kappa}\right)$. Second, $\widehat{\Psi}_{0}$ is defined to be the product $\widehat{\Psi}_{q} \widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}$, where $\widehat{\Psi}_{\infty}$ is a simple solution of (6.27) given by (6.28). Third, $\Psi_{0}$ is the transformation of the $\widehat{\Psi}_{0}$ via (6.25). Fourth, the partition functions are defined by $\Gamma_{0}=\Psi_{0} \Theta_{I}^{-\frac{2}{\kappa}}$, $\Gamma_{m}(t, x)=\Gamma_{0}(t, x-2 m \pi)$, and $\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}=\sum_{m \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{\frac{2 \pi}{\kappa} m s_{0}} \Gamma_{m}$. Fifth, the annulus drift functions are defined by $\Lambda_{*}=\kappa \frac{\Gamma_{*}^{\prime}}{\Gamma_{*}}$.

## 7 Reversibility

The main result of this section is the theorem below which generalizes Theorem 1.1.
Theorem 7.1 Let $\kappa \in(0,4]$ and $s_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$. If $\beta(t),-\infty \leq t<\infty$, is a whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{0}\right)$ trace in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ from a to $b$, then the reversal of $\beta$, up to a time-change, has the distribution of a whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{0}\right)$ trace in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ from $b$ to $a$.

Proof From conformal invariance, we only need to consider the case $a=0$ and $b=\infty$. Let $\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ be given by Theorem 6.4 with $\sigma=\frac{4}{\kappa}-1$. Then $\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$ solves (4.1) and satisfies (4.2). We now apply Theorem 5.1 to $\Gamma=\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}$. Let $\Lambda_{j}, s_{j}$ and $\beta_{I, j}(t), j=1,2$, be given by Theorem 5.1. Then for $j=1,2, \beta_{I, j}$ is a whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{j}\right)$ trace in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ from 0 to $\infty$, and satisfies that, for any $t_{2} \in \mathbb{Q}$, conditioned on $\beta_{I, 2}(s),-\infty \leq s \leq t_{2}$, after a time-change, the curve $\beta_{I, 1}\left(t_{1}\right),-\infty \leq t_{1}<T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)$, has the distribution of a disc $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{1}\right)$ trace in $\mathbb{C} \backslash I_{0}\left(\beta_{I, 2}\left(\left[-\infty, t_{2}\right]\right)\right)$ started from 0 with marked point $\beta_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}\right)$, where $T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)$ is the maximal number in $(-\infty,+\infty]$ such that $\beta_{1}(t) \cap \beta_{2}\left(\left[-\infty, t_{2}\right]\right)=\emptyset$ for $-\infty<t<T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)$.

Let $\xi_{2}$ be the driving function for $\left(\beta_{I, 2}(t)\right)$, and $g_{2}(t, \cdot),-\infty<t<\infty$, be the inverted whole-plane Loewner maps driven by $\xi_{2}$. Then $g_{2}(t, \cdot)$ maps $\mathbb{C} \backslash I_{0}\left(\beta_{I, 2}\left(\left[-\infty, t_{2}\right]\right)\right)$ conformally onto $\mathbb{D}$, fixes 0 , and takes $\beta_{I, 2}\left(t_{2}\right)$ to $e^{i}\left(\xi_{x}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)$. Thus, conditioned on $\beta_{I, 2}(s),-\infty \leq s \leq t_{2}, g_{2}\left(t, \beta_{I, 1}\left(t_{1}\right)\right), 0 \leq t_{1}<T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)$, is a time-change of a disc $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{1}\right)$ trace in $\mathbb{D}$ started from 0 with marked point
$e^{i}\left(\xi_{x}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)$. Since $\Lambda_{1}=\Lambda=\kappa^{\Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}^{\prime}} \Gamma_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}^{\prime}$, from Corollary 6.1 and the relation between the disc $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ process and the annulus $\operatorname{SLE}(\kappa, \Lambda)$ process, we conclude that a.s. $e^{i}\left(\xi_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)$ is a subsequential limit of $g_{2}\left(t_{2}, \beta_{I, 1}(t)\right)$ as $t \rightarrow T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)^{-}$. Thus, $\beta_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)$ is a subsequential limit of $\beta_{I, 1}(t)$ as $t \rightarrow T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)^{-}$. If $T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)=\infty$, then $\lim _{t \rightarrow T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)^{-}} \beta_{I, 1}(t)=\infty=\beta_{2}(-\infty) \neq \beta_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)$, which is a.s. a contradiction. So $T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)<\infty$ a.s., and we have $\beta_{I, 1}\left(T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)=\lim _{t \rightarrow T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)^{-}} \beta_{I, 1}(t)=\beta_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)$ a.s. Since $\mathbb{Q}$ is countable, we conclude that, a.s. $\beta_{I, 1}\left(T_{1}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)=\beta_{2}\left(t_{2}\right)$ for every $t_{2} \in \mathbb{Q}$, which implies that a.s. $\beta_{2}(\mathbb{R}) \subset \beta_{I, 1}(\mathbb{R})$. Since both $\beta_{I, 1}$ and $\beta_{2}$ are simple, and the initial (resp. final) point of $\beta_{I, 1}$ agrees with the final (resp. initial) point of $\beta_{2}$, we see that $\beta_{2}$ is a reversal of $\beta_{I, 1}$. Now $\beta_{I, 1}$ is a whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{0}\right)$ trace in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ from 0 to $\infty$, and $\beta_{I, 2}$ is a whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa,-s_{0}\right)$ trace in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ started from 0 to $\infty$. Since $I_{0}$ is conjugate conformal, $\beta_{2}=I_{0}\left(\beta_{I, 2}\right)$ is a whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{0}\right)$ trace in $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}$ from $\infty$ to 0 . So we proved the theorem in the case $a=0$ and $b=\infty$.

Theorem 7.2 If $\beta(t), 0 \leq t<\infty$, is a radial $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa,-s_{0}\right)$ trace in a simply connected domain $D$ from a to $b$, then a.s. $\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \beta(t)=b$, and after a time-change, the reversal of $\beta$ becomes a disc $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\right)$ trace in $D$ started from $b$ with marked point $a$.

Proof This follows from the property of the coupling in Theorem 7.1 and the relation between whole-plane $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, s_{0}\right)$ and radial $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa,-s_{0}\right)$.

Theorem 7.3 Let $D$ be a doubly connected domain with two boundary points $a, b$ lying on different boundary components. If $\beta(t), 0 \leq t<p$, is an annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\right)$ trace in D started from a with marked point $b$, then $\lim _{t \rightarrow p} \beta(t)=b$, and after a time-change, the reversal of $\beta$ becomes an annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\right)$ trace in $D$ started from $b$ with marked point $a$.

Proof This follows from the property of the coupling in Theorem 7.1, and the relation between disc $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\right)$ and annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa, \Lambda_{\left\langle s_{0}\right\rangle}\right)$.

Remark For $\kappa \in(0,6)$ and $\sigma=\frac{1}{2}+\frac{1}{\kappa} \in\left[0, \frac{4}{\kappa}\right)$, the $\Lambda_{\langle 0\rangle}$ given by Proposition 6.3 can be used to decompose an annulus $\mathrm{SLE}_{\kappa}$ process (without marked point). The statement is similar to Lemma 3.1 in [12].

## 8 Some particular solutions

In this section, for $\kappa \in\{4,2,3,0,16 / 3\}$, we will find solutions to the PDE for $\Lambda$ ((4.3) and (4.49)) and the PDE for $\Gamma$ ((4.1) and (4.48)), which can be expressed in terms of $\mathbf{H}$ and $\mathbf{H}_{I}$. Since $\Lambda=\kappa \frac{\Gamma^{\prime}}{\Gamma}$, multiplying a function in $t$ to $\Gamma$ does not change the value of $\Lambda$. So we may as well consider the following PDEs for $\Gamma$, where $C(t)$ is some real valued continuous depending only on $t$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
& \partial_{t} \Gamma=\frac{\kappa}{2} \Gamma^{\prime \prime}+\mathbf{H}_{I} \Gamma^{\prime}+\left(\frac{3}{\kappa}-\frac{1}{2}\right) \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime} \Gamma+C(t) \Gamma .  \tag{8.1}\\
& \partial_{t} \Gamma=\frac{\kappa}{2} \Gamma^{\prime \prime}+\mathbf{H} \Gamma^{\prime}+\left(\frac{3}{\kappa}-\frac{1}{2}\right) \mathbf{H}^{\prime} \Gamma+C(t) \Gamma . \tag{8.2}
\end{align*}
$$

$8.1 \kappa=4$
Let $\kappa=4$. From Lemma 4.1 we see that if $\Psi$ solves.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \Psi=2 \Psi^{\prime \prime} \tag{8.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $\Gamma=\Psi \Theta_{I}^{-2 / \kappa}$ solves (4.1). Similarly, $\Gamma=\Psi \Theta^{-2 / \kappa}$ solves (4.48) if $\Psi$ solves (8.3). The solutions to (8.3) are well-known. For example, we have the following solutions: $e^{2 c^{2} t+c x}, \frac{1}{\sqrt{8 \pi t}} e^{-\frac{(x-c)^{2}}{8 t}}, e^{-t / 2} \sin _{2}(x-c), \Theta(2 t, x-c)$, and $\Theta_{I}(2 t, x-c)$. The function $\Theta_{I}(2 t, x-\pi)$ corresponds to the solution $\Gamma(t, x)=\Theta_{I}(2 t, x-\pi) \Theta_{I}(t, x)^{-1 / 2}$ of (8.1), which agrees with the solution given by Sect. 6.3 for $\kappa=4$ and $\sigma=\frac{4}{\kappa}-1=0$. Some of these solutions are related to the Gaussian free field ([5]) in doubly connected domains.
$8.2 \kappa=2$
Let $\kappa=2$. In this case if $\Xi$ on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$ solves

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \Xi=\Xi^{\prime \prime}+\Xi^{\prime} \mathbf{H}_{I}+C(t) \Xi \tag{8.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $\Gamma:=\Xi^{\prime}$ solves (8.1). Similarly, if $\Xi$ on $(0, \infty) \times(\mathbb{R} \backslash\{2 n \pi: n \in \mathbb{Z}\})$ solves

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \Xi=\Xi^{\prime \prime}+\Xi^{\prime} \mathbf{H}+C(t) \Xi \tag{8.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $\Gamma:=\Xi^{\prime}$ solves (8.2).
From (2.8) we see that $\Xi_{1}=\mathbf{H}_{I}$ solves (8.4) and $\Xi_{2}=\mathbf{H}$ solves (8.5) with $C(t)=0$. It is also easy to check that $\Xi_{3}(t, x)=t \mathbf{H}_{I}(t, x)+x$ solves (8.4) and $\Xi_{4}(t, x)=t \mathbf{H}(t, x)+x$ solves (8.5) with $C(t)=0$. The $\Xi_{3}$ corresponds to the solution $\Gamma(t, x)=t \mathbf{H}_{I}^{\prime}(t, x)+1$, which agrees with the solution given by Sect. 6.3 for $\kappa=2$ and $\sigma=\frac{4}{\kappa}-1=1$. Such $\Gamma$ is also the density function of the distribution of the limit point of an annulus $\mathrm{SLE}_{2}$ trace.

We now derive more solutions. Fix $t>0$. Let $L_{t}=\{2 n \pi+i 2 k t: n, k \in \mathbb{Z}\}$. Let $F_{1, t}$ denote the set of odd analytic functions $f$ on $\mathbb{C} \backslash L_{t}$ such that each $z \in L_{t}$ is a simple pole of $f, 2 \pi$ is a period of $f$, and $i 2 t$ is an antiperiod of $f$, i.e., $f(z+i 2 t)=-f(z)$. Let $F_{2, t}$ denote the set of odd analytic functions $f$ on $\mathbb{C} \backslash L_{t}$ such that each $z \in L_{t}$ is a simple pole of $f, 2 \pi$ is an antiperiod of $f$, and $i 2 t$ is a period of $f$. Let $F_{3, t}$ denote the set of odd analytic functions $f$ on $\mathbb{C} \backslash L_{t}$ such that each $z \in L_{t}$ is a simple pole of $f$, and both $2 \pi$ and $i 2 t$ are antiperiods of $f$. Define

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Xi_{1}(t, z)=\mathbf{H}(2 t, z)-\mathbf{H}_{I}(2 t, z), \quad \Xi_{2}(t, z)=\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{H}\left(\frac{t}{2}, \frac{z}{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{H}\left(\frac{t}{2}, \frac{z}{2}+\pi\right), \\
& \Xi_{3}(t, z)=\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{H}\left(t, \frac{z}{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}\left(t, \frac{z}{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{H}\left(t, \frac{z}{2}+\pi\right)+\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{H}_{I}\left(t, \frac{z}{2}+\pi\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

From the properties of $\mathbf{H}$ and $\mathbf{H}_{I}$, it is easy to check that $F_{j, t}$ is the linear space spanned by $\Xi_{j}(t, \cdot)$ for $j=1,2,3$. For $j=1,2,3$, Define

$$
J_{j}=\partial_{t} \Xi_{j}-\Xi_{j}^{\prime \prime}-\Xi_{j}^{\prime} \mathbf{H}, \quad C_{j}(t)=\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{Res}_{z=0} J_{j}(t, \cdot)
$$

Fix $t>0$. Note that 0 is a simple pole of both $\mathbf{H}(t, \cdot)$ and $\Xi_{1}(t, \cdot)$ of residue 2. It is easy to conclude that 0 is also a simple pole of $J_{1}(t, \cdot)$. From that $\Xi_{1}(t, \cdot) \in F_{1, t}$, that $\mathbf{H}(t, \cdot)$ has period $2 \pi$, and that $\mathbf{H}(t, z+2 \pi)=\mathbf{H}(t, z)-2 i$, it is easy to check that $J_{1}(t, \cdot) \in F_{1, t}$ as well. So $J_{1}(t, \cdot)=C_{1}(t) \Xi_{1}(t, \cdot)$. Thus, $\Xi_{1}$ solves (8.5). Similarly, $\Xi_{2}$ and $\Xi_{3}$ both solve (8.5).
$8.3 \kappa=3$
Let $\kappa=3$. Let $\Xi_{j}, j=1,2,3$, be as in the previous subsection. For $j=1,2,3$, let $\Gamma_{j}=\Xi_{j}$, and define

$$
H_{j}=\partial_{t} \Gamma_{j}-\frac{3}{2} \Gamma_{j}^{\prime \prime}-\mathbf{H} \Gamma_{j}^{\prime}-\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{H}^{\prime} \Gamma_{j}, \quad C_{j}(t)=\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{Res}_{z=0} H_{j}(t, \cdot)
$$

Using the argument in the last subsection, we find that $H_{j}(t, \cdot) \in F_{j, t}$ for any $t>0$. So $H_{j}(t, \cdot)=C_{j}(t) \Gamma_{j}(t, \cdot)$. Thus, $\Gamma_{1}, \Gamma_{2}, \Gamma_{3}$ solve (8.2). For $j=4,5,6$, let $\Gamma_{j}(t, z)=$ $\Gamma_{j-3}(t, z+i t)$. Since $\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z)=\mathbf{H}(t, z+i t)+i, \Gamma_{4}, \Gamma_{5}, \Gamma_{6}$ solve (8.1).

For $j=2,3, \Gamma_{j}$ takes positive real values on $(0,2 \pi)+4 \pi \mathbb{Z}$, takes negative real values on $(-2 \pi, 0)+4 \pi \mathbb{Z}$, and has antiperiod $2 \pi$. So $\Lambda_{j}:=3 \frac{\Gamma_{j}^{\prime}}{\Gamma_{j}}$ is a chordal-type annulus drift function that solves (4.49) for $\kappa=3$. It is worth to mention that the annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa ; \Lambda_{j}\right)$ process preserves the following local martingale, which resembles the $G(\Omega, a, b, z)$ in Proposition 11 of [7]. The proof uses the fact that $\Gamma_{j}$ solves (8.2) for $z \in \mathbb{C} \backslash\{$ poles $\}$.

Proposition 8.1 Let $j \in\{2,3\}$ and $p>0$. Let $x_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$ and $z_{0} \in \mathbb{R} \backslash\left(x_{0}+2 \pi \mathbb{Z}\right)$. Let $\xi(t), 0 \leq t<T$, be the driving function for the covering annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa ; \Lambda_{j}\right)$ process in $\mathbb{S}_{p}$ started from $x_{0}$ with marked point $z_{0}$. Let $\widetilde{g}_{t}, 0 \leq t<T$, be the covering annulus Loewner maps of modulus $p$ driven by $\xi$. Then for every $z \in \mathbb{S}_{p}$,

$$
M_{t}(z):=\frac{\Gamma_{j}\left(p-t, \widetilde{g}_{t}(z)-\xi(t)\right)}{\Gamma_{j}\left(p-t, \widetilde{g}_{t}\left(z_{0}\right)-\xi(t)\right)} \cdot \frac{\widetilde{g}_{t}^{\prime}(z)^{1 / 2}}{\widetilde{g}_{t}^{\prime}\left(z_{0}\right)^{1 / 2}}
$$

is a local martingale for $0 \leq t<T$.
For $j=1, \Gamma_{1}(t, \cdot)$ takes nonzero pure imaginary values on $\mathbb{R}_{t}$, the related function $\Gamma_{4}$ agrees with the solution given by Sect. 6.3 for $\kappa=3$ and $\sigma=\frac{4}{\kappa}-1=\frac{1}{3}$ up to a pure imaginary multiplicative constant, and $\Lambda_{4}:=3 \frac{\Gamma_{4}^{\prime}}{\Gamma_{4}}$ is a crossing annulus drift function that solves (4.3) for $\kappa=3$. The annulus $\operatorname{SLE}\left(\kappa ; \Lambda_{4}\right)$ process also preserves a local martingale. In fact, Proposition 8.1 holds with $z_{0} \in \mathbb{R}_{p}, \Lambda_{j}$ replaced by $\Lambda_{4}$, and $\Gamma_{j}$ replaced by $\Gamma_{1}$.
$8.4 \kappa=0$

Let $\kappa=0$. Let $L_{t}$ be as in Sect. 8.2. Let $\mathbf{H}_{2}(t, z)=\mathbf{H}(t, z / 2)$. From (2.8) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \mathbf{H}_{2}=4 \mathbf{H}_{2}^{\prime \prime}+2 \mathbf{H}_{2}^{\prime} \mathbf{H}_{2} \tag{8.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\Lambda_{1}=\mathbf{H}-2 \mathbf{H}_{2}$. Then for each $t>0, \Lambda_{1}(t, \cdot)$ is an odd analytic function on $\mathbb{C} \backslash L_{t}$, and each $z \in L_{t}$ is a simple pole of $\Lambda_{1}$. From $\mathbf{H}(t, z+2 \pi)=\mathbf{H}(t, z)$ and $\mathbf{H}(t, z+i 2 t)=\mathbf{H}(t, z)-2 i$ we see that both $4 \pi$ and $i 4 t$ are periods of $\Lambda_{1}(t, \cdot)$. Fix $t>0$, and define

$$
J(z)=\frac{\Lambda_{1}(t, z)^{2}}{2}-2 \Lambda_{1}^{\prime}(t, z)+3 \mathbf{H}^{\prime}(t, z)
$$

Then $J$ is an even analytic function on $\mathbb{C} \backslash L_{t}$ and has periods $4 \pi$ and $i 4 t$. Fix any $z_{0}=2 n_{0} \pi+i 2 k_{0} t \in L_{t}$ for some $n_{0}, k_{0} \in \mathbb{Z}$. Then $2 z_{0}$ is a period of $J$, so $J_{z_{0}}(z):=J\left(z-z_{0}\right)$ is an even function. Thus, $\operatorname{Res}_{z=z_{0}} J(z)=0$. The degree of $z_{0}$ as a pole of $J$ is at most 2 . The principal part of $J$ at $z_{0}$ is $\frac{C\left(z_{0}\right)}{\left(z-z_{0}\right)^{2}}$ for some $C\left(z_{0}\right) \in \mathbb{C}$. Note that $\operatorname{Res}_{z_{0}} \mathbf{H}(t, z)=2$ and $\operatorname{Res}_{z_{0}} \Lambda_{1}(t, z)=-6$ or 2 . In either case, we compute $C\left(z_{0}\right)=0$. Thus, every $z_{0} \in L_{t}$ is a removable pole of $J$, which, together with the periods $4 \pi$ and $i 4 t$, implies that $J$ is a constant depending only on $t$. Differentiating $J$ w.r.t. $z$, we conclude that

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 \Lambda_{1}^{\prime \prime}=\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}+3 \mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime} \tag{8.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

From $\Lambda_{1}=\mathbf{H}-2 \mathbf{H}_{2}$ we have $2 \mathbf{H}_{2}=\mathbf{H}-\Lambda_{1}$. So from (8.6) and (8.7), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\partial_{t} \mathbf{H}-\partial_{t} \Lambda_{1} & =2 \partial_{t} \mathbf{H}_{2}=8 \mathbf{H}_{2}^{\prime \prime}+4 \mathbf{H}_{2}^{\prime} \mathbf{H}_{2}=4 \mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime}-4 \Lambda_{1}^{\prime \prime}+\left(\mathbf{H}^{\prime}-\Lambda_{1}^{\prime}\right)\left(\mathbf{H}-\Lambda_{1}\right) \\
& =4 \mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime}-2\left(\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}+3 \mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime}\right)+\left(\mathbf{H}^{\prime}-\Lambda_{1}^{\prime}\right)\left(\mathbf{H}-\Lambda_{1}\right) \\
& =-2 \mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime}-\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}+\mathbf{H}^{\prime} \mathbf{H}-\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \mathbf{H}-\mathbf{H}^{\prime} \Lambda_{1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

From the above formula and (2.8), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t} \Lambda_{1}=3 \mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime}+\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}+\mathbf{H}^{\prime} \Lambda_{1}+\Lambda_{1}^{\prime} \mathbf{H} \tag{8.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, $\Lambda_{1}$ solves (4.49). Note that $\mathbf{H}_{I}(t, z / 2)$ also satisfies (8.6). Let $\Lambda_{2}(t, z)$ $:=\mathbf{H}(t, z)-\mathbf{H}_{I}\left(t, \frac{z}{2}\right)$. Then $\Lambda_{2}(t, \cdot)$ is also an odd analytic function on $\mathbb{C} \backslash L_{t}$ and has periods $4 \pi$ and $i 4 t$. The principal part of $\Lambda_{2}(t, \cdot)$ at every $z_{0} \in L_{t}$ is also either $\frac{-6}{z-z_{0}}$ or $\frac{2}{z-z_{0}}$. Using a similar argument, we conclude that $\Lambda_{2}$ also solves (4.49).
$8.5 \kappa=16 / 3$
Let $\kappa=16 / 3$. Let $\Lambda_{1}$ and $\Lambda_{2}$ be as in the last subsection. Let $\Lambda_{3}=-\Lambda_{1} / 3$. From (8.7) we have

$$
0=\frac{8}{3} \Lambda_{3}^{\prime \prime}+4 \Lambda_{3}^{\prime} \Lambda_{3}+\frac{4}{3} \mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime}
$$

From (8.8) we have

$$
\partial_{t} \Lambda_{3}=-\mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime}-3 \Lambda_{3}^{\prime} \Lambda_{3}+\mathbf{H}^{\prime} \Lambda_{3}+\Lambda_{3}^{\prime} \mathbf{H}
$$

Summing up the above two equalities, we get

$$
\partial_{t} \Lambda_{3}=\frac{8}{3} \Lambda_{3}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{1}{3} \mathbf{H}^{\prime \prime}+\mathbf{H}^{\prime} \Lambda_{3}+\Lambda_{3}^{\prime} \mathbf{H}+\Lambda_{3}^{\prime} \Lambda_{3} .
$$

Thus, $\Lambda_{3}$ solves (4.49). Similarly, $\Lambda_{4}:=-\Lambda_{2} / 3$ also solves (4.49). Here $\Lambda_{3}$ and $\Lambda_{4}$ have period $4 \pi$ instead of $2 \pi$. If we want a solution to (4.3) with period $2 \pi$, we may first restrict $\Lambda_{3}$ or $\Lambda_{4}$ to the interval $(0,2 \pi)$ or $(-2 \pi, 0)$, and then extend it to $\mathbb{R} \backslash\{2 n \pi: n \in \mathbb{Z}\}$ so that the function has period $2 \pi$.

Acknowledgments I would like to thank Alexander Volberg for his suggestions on transforming PDE (4.4) into (4.5), and thank Zhen-Qing Chen for his help on Lemma 6.2. I also thank Gregory Lawler for his valuable comments and suggestions.

## References

1. Schramm, O.: Scaling limits of loop-erased random walks and uniform spanning trees. Israel J. Math. 118, 221-288 (2000)
2. Lawler, G.F., Schramm, O., Werner, W.: Conformal restriction: the chordal case. J. Am. Math. Soc. 16(4), 917-955 (2003)
3. Lawler, G.F., Schramm, O., Werner, W.: Conformal invariance of planar loop-erased random walks and uniform spanning trees. Ann. Probab. 32(1B), 939-995 (2004)
4. Schramm, O., Sheffield, S.: Harmonic explorer and its convergence to SLE 4. Ann. Probab. 33, 21272148 (2005)
5. Schramm, O., Sheffield, S.: Contour lines of the two-dimensional discrete Gaussian free field. Acta Math. 202(1), 21-137 (2009)
6. Smirnov, S.: Critical percolation in the plane: conformal invariance Cardy's formula scaling limits. C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris Sér. I Math. 333(3), 239-244 (2001)
7. Smirnov, S.: Towards conformal invariance of 2D lattice models. International Congress of Mathematicians., vol. II, pp. 1421-1451, European Mathematical Society, Zurich (2006)
8. Lawler, G.F.: Conformally Invariant Processes in the Plane. American Mathematical Soc., Providence (2005)
9. Rohde, S., Schramm, O.: Basic properties of SLE. Ann. Math. 161(2), 883-924 (2005)
10. Zhan, D.: Reversibility of chordal SLE. Ann. Probab. 36(4), 1472-1494 (2008)
11. Zhan, D.: Duality of chordal SLE. Invent. Math. 174(2), 309-353 (2008)
12. Zhan, D.: Duality of chordal SLE, II. Ann. I. H. Poincare Pr. 46(3), 740-759 (2010)
13. Zhan, D.: Loop-erasure of planar Brownian motion. Commun. Math. Phys. 303(3), 709-720 (2011)
14. Zhan, D.: Reversibility of some chordal SLE $(\kappa ; \rho)$ processes. J. Stat. Phys. 139(6), 1013-1032 (2010)
15. Zhan, D.: Continuous LERW started from interior points. Stoch. Proc. Appl. 120, 1267-1316 (2010)
16. Lawler, G.F.: Intersection of random walks. Birkhäuser, Boston (1991)
17. Zhan, D.: Stochastic Loewner evolution in doubly connected domains. Probab. Theory Rel. 129(3), 340-380 (2004)
18. Dubédat, J.: Commutation relations for SLE. Comm. Pure Appl. Math. 60(12), 1792-1847 (2007)
19. Zhan, D.: Restriction properties of annulus SLE. J. Stat. Phys. 146(5), 1026-1058 (2012)
20. Lawler, G.F.: Defining SLE in multiply connected domains with the Brownian loop measure, arXiv: 1108.4364v1 (2001)
21. Miller, J., Sheffield, S.: Imaginary geometry IV: interior rays, whole-plane reversibility, and spacefilling trees, arXiv:1302.4738 (2013)
22. Miller, J., Sheffield, S.: Imaginary geometry I: interacting SLE paths, arXiv:1201.1496 (2012)
23. Revuz, D., Yor, M.: Continuous martingales and Brownian motion. Springer, Berlin (1991)
24. Chandrasekharan, K.: Elliptic functions. Springer-Verlag, Berlin Heidelberg (1985)
25. Zhan, D.: Some properties of annulus SLE. Electron. J. Probab., 11, Paper 41:1069-1093, 2006
26. Ahlfors, L.V.: Conformal invariants: topics in geometric function theory. McGraw-Hill Book Co., New York (1973)
27. Schramm, O., Wilson, D.B.: SLE coordinate changes. N. Y. J. Math. 11, 659-669 (2005)
28. Bass, R.F., Chen., Z.-Q.: One-dimensional stochastic differential equations with singular and degenerate coefficients. Sankhya India J. Stat. 67, 19-45 (2005)
